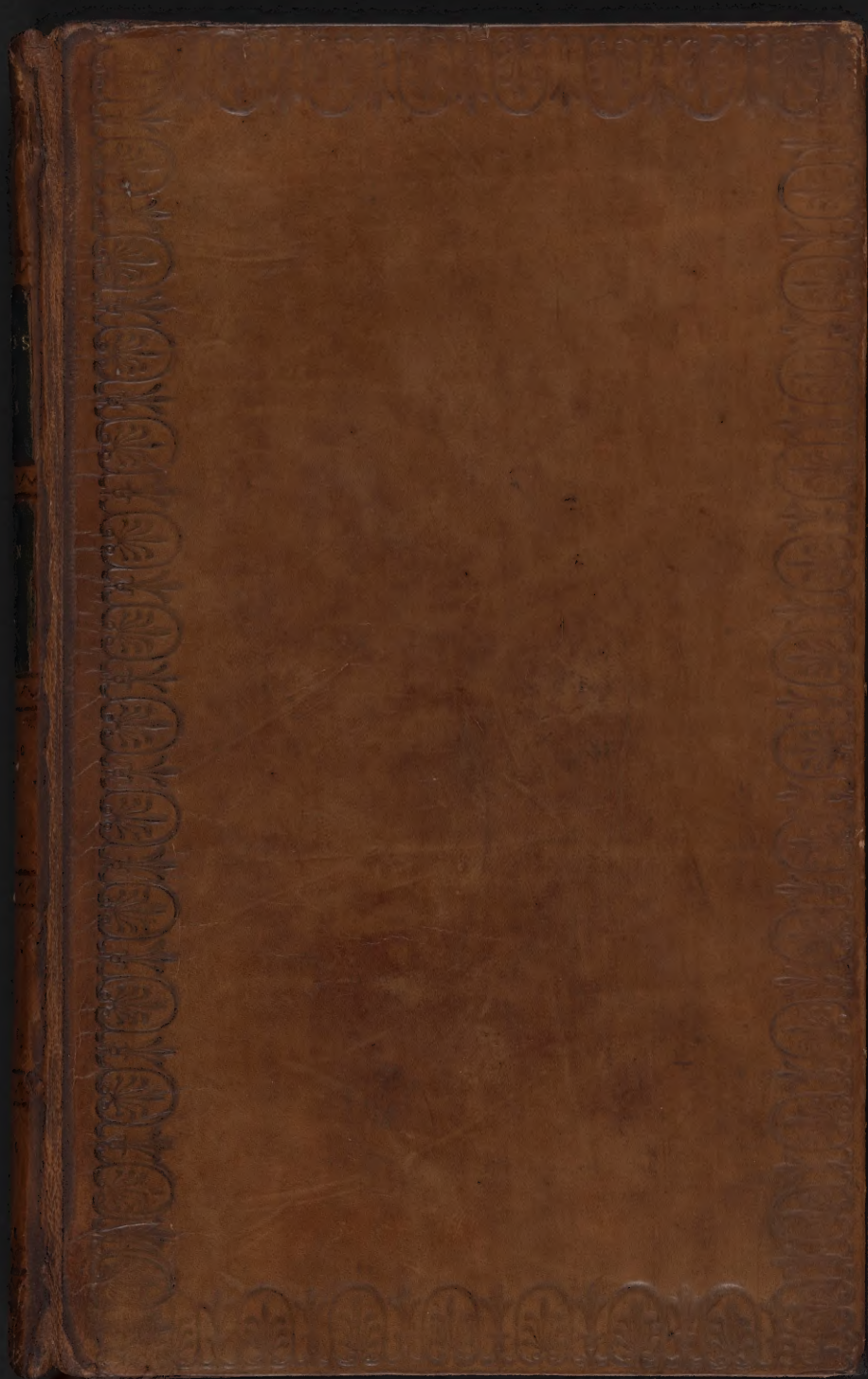




(160) Josselyn. [2 items in 1 vol].

231





XV. k. 31



*Oak Spring Garden Library*



1069



J. G. Lebright - 1824.



These Two Rare Books, I  
made companions & bound  
them together anno 1763

HOLLIS M. F. R. S.

S. A. S.

The  
Sword Fish run down the ship, & got  
& broke its sword - - - - - 310

July 85 In the time Winter garments  
of the Ladies - was guarded, or turned up,  
with Lusern or Luxern is what is  
called the Wild Cat in North America  
but is the Lynx properly speaking  
and is very like the Lynx of the North  
parts of Europe & Asia



" Taken from a Little Book  
intituled, = Mortons. History  
of New Canaan, now New England,  
about the year <sup>1630</sup> ~~1630~~ —  
a Discovery of the Lakes of  
Canada — undertaken by  
Henry Joselyn Esq<sup>r</sup> — ~~son~~  
Son of J<sup>r</sup> Thomas Joselyn <sup>at Petty Na</sup>  
Esq<sup>r</sup> Treas. Knight, — ~~by~~ <sup>by</sup>  
the Order of that great Patriot  
Capt John Mason Esq<sup>r</sup> — <sup>Pro</sup>  
who at his own Charge fitted  
out. Master Joselyn who  
Sett out from New Plymouth  
in New England on that Discovery



h. as John Joselyn in his Two  
Voyages & on his tract intitled  
New Englands Rarities —  
Does not Mention Henry Joselyn  
But that His Two Voyages was to  
go & see His Brother whose  
Name He do there Mention  
Living at Black Point in the  
Province of Maine <sup>miles</sup> 150 from Boston  
probably He was the Henry Joselyn  
that went over in 1630 — as  
John Joselyns first Voy. was in 1634



*The  
Booksellers  
Sign*



|||||  
In this Treatise the Chronological  
Table is much longer than  
in his book Intituled, New England  
Privileges, published 1672.

L I C E N S E D

BY  
David Last Voyages 1671  
Roger L'estrang

Novemb. the  
28. 1673.

Great Moor, Berrys 90



AN  
ACCOUNT  
OF TWO  
VOYAGES  
TO  
NEW-ENGLAND.

1638

1663

to  
1673

Wherein you have the setting out of a Ship,  
with the charges ; The prices of all necessaries for  
furnishing a Planter and his Family at his first com-  
ing ; A Description of the Countrey, Natives and  
Creatures, with their Merchantil and Physical use ;  
The Government of the Countrey as it is now pos-  
sessed by the *English*, &c. A large Chronological Ta-  
ble of the most remarkable passages, from the first dis-  
covering of the Continent of *America*, to the year  
1673.

By John Josselyn Gent.

Memner, distich rendred English by Dr. Heylin.

*Heart, take thine ease,  
Men hard to please  
Thou haply might'st offend,  
Though one speak ill  
Of thee, some will  
Say better ; there's an end.*

London, Printed for Giles Widdows, at the Green-Drago  
in St. Paul's-Church-yard, 1674.



TO THE  
RIGHT HONOURABLE,  
AND  
MOST ILLUSTRIOUS  
THE  
President & Fellows

OF THE  
ROYAL SOCIETY:

The following Account of Two

VOYAGES  
TO

New-England,

Is Most Humbly presented

By the Authour

*John Josselyn.*

To the Reader :

**Y**<sup>O</sup><sup>U</sup> are desired by the Authour to correct some literal faults, which by reason of the raggedness of the Copy have been committed.

G. Widdows.

ERRATA.

**P**age 4. line 10. for *Soutler*, read *Souflet* : p. 8. l. 9. for *fu'd*, r. *in'd* : p. 12. l. 28. for *pound* pint : p. 15. l. 11. for *Two pound* r. *Two Shilling* : p. 16. l. 27. for *heads* r. *steels* : p. 38. l. 3. to the 18. misplaced, it should come in the next page in the beginning of the 10 l. after *contribute your belief* — p. 89. l. 14. for *horns*, r. *horn* : p. 89. l. 17. for *law* : p. 97. l. 9. for *this*, r. *his* : p. 98. l. 13. for *r. still* : p. 110. for *paint*, r. *joynt* : p. 114. l. 9. for *will*, r. *that will* : p. 115. l. 2. for *convenium* r. *convenient* : p. 132. l. 7. for *with*, r. *in* : p. 153. for *Auraria*, r. *Araria* : p. 154. l. 11. for *Longlace*, r. *Lovelace* : p. 180. l. 9. r. *true Religion* : p. 181. l. 16. for *main travels* *Women*, r. *many strange Women* : some stops and points are not right, as p. 181. l. 4. the stop should be at one so p. 181. l. 30. the stop should be after *evil eye* : 202. l. 2. it must be at low water : p. 191. l. 1. r. 16. p. 197. l. 13. r. *Travellers* : p. 202. l. 17. r. *Acconition* : p. 229. l. 21. for *and* r. *who* : p. 252. l. 10. r. *The* *Dudly*, *Isaac Johnson*, *Esquires* : p. 274. l. 13. and *1. Buccaneers*.

*\* Sacre & Minion, was then the  
name of Ship Guns -*





A  
RELATION  
OF TWO  
VOYAGES  
TO  
New-England.

*The first Voyage.*

*fol. 1:*

*Second Voyage*

*fol. 33*



NNO Dom. 1638. April the  
26th being Thursday, I came to  
Gravesend and went aboard  
the *New Supply*, alias, the *Ni-*  
*cholas* of London, a Ship of  
good force, of 300 Tuns burden, carrying  
20 Sacre and Minion, man'd with 48 Sai-  
lers, the Master *Robert Taylor*, the Merchant  
or undertaker *Mr. Edward Tinge*, with  
164 Passengers men, women and children.

B

A:

1698

At Gravesend I began my Journal, from whence we departed on the 26. of April, about Six of the clock at night, and went down into the Hope.

Butch Ship

The 27. being Fryday, we set sail out the Hope, and about Nine of the clock night we came to an Anchor in Margate Road in three fathom and a half water: the way we past a States man of war, 500 Tun, cast away a month before up the Goodwin, nothing remaining visible above water but her main mast top, 16 her men were drowned, the rest saved by Fishermen.

The 28. we twined into the Downs where Captain Clark one of His Majesties Captains in the Navy, came aboard of in the afternoon, and prest two of our Trumpeters. Here we had good store of Flounders from the Fishermen, new taken out of the Sea and living, which being readily gutted, were fry'd while they were warm; me thoughts I never tasted of a more delicater Fish in all my life before.

The Third of May being Ascension day in the afternoon we weighed out of the Downs, the wind at E. and ran down into the Dover Road, and lay by the lee, whilst we sent the Skiffe ashore for one of the Main mates: by the way we past Sandwich in the

Hogan to



from Hope, Sandown-Castle, Deal; So we steered a <sup>†</sup>*Dungeness*  
 April way for Doniessa, from thence we steered S.  
 went W.  $\frac{1}{2}$  S. for the Beachie, about one of the clock  
 at night the wind took us a stayes with a  
 gulf, rain, thunder and lightning, and now  
 a Servant of one of the passengers sickned  
 of the small pox.

The Fifth day in the afternoon we An-  
 chored, the Isle of Wight W. N. W. 10 leagues  
 off, Beachie E. N. E. 8 leagues off, rode in  
 32 fathom-water at low water, at 8 of the  
 clock at night the land over the Needles  
 bore N. W. 4 leagues off, we steered W. a-  
 fore the Start, at noon the Boults was N.  
 W. by W. about  $3\frac{1}{2}$  leagues off, we were  
 becalmed from 7 of the clock in the morn-  
 ing, till 12 of the clock at noon, where we  
 took good store of *Whitings*, and half a  
 store of *Gurnets*, this afternoon an infinite  
 number of *Porpoises* shewed themselves a-  
 bove water round about the Ship, as far as  
 we could kenn, the night proved tempestu-  
 ed of us with much lightning and thunder.

The Sixth day being *Sunday*, at five of  
 the clock at night the *Lizard* was N. W. by  
 W. 6 leagues off, and the *Blackhead* which  
 is to the westward of *Falmouth* was N. W.  
 about 5 leagues off.

The Seventh day the uttermost part of  
 the land was N. E. 12 leagues off, and now we  
 began to sail by the logg.

*nan Duck*

+

*10 whales  
fighting  
w. sword  
fish -*

*Water  
Spout*

The Eighth day, one Boremans man a passenger was duck'd at the main yards arm (for being drunk with his Masters strong waters which he stole) thrice, and fire given to two whole Sacres, at that instant. Two mighty Whales we now saw, the one spout water through two great holes in her head into the Air a great height, and making great noise with puffing and blowing, the Seamen called her a Soufler; the other was further off, about a league from the Ship fighting with the Sword-fish, and the Fluke fish, whose stroakes with a fin that grows upon her back like a flail, upon the back of the Whale, we heard with amazement when presently some more than half a league again we spied a spout from above, it came pouring down like a River of water; that if they should light in any Ship, they were in danger to be presently sunk down into the Sea, and fall with such an extraordinary violence all whole together as a drop, or as water out of a Vessel, and lasted red a quarter of an hour, making the Sea to boyle like a pot, and, if any Vessel was near, it sucks it in. I saw many of the spouts afterwards at nearer distance. In the afternoon the Mariners struck a Porpoise called also a *Marsvius* or Sea-hogg, when she was harping Iron, and hoisted her aboard.



they cut some of it into thin pieces, and  
 fried, it tastes like rusty Bacon, or hung Beef,  
 if not worse; but the Liver boiled and  
 soufed sometime in Vinegar is more grateful  
 to the paller. About 8 of the clock at  
 night, a flame settled upon the main mast, it  
 was about the bigness of a great Candle,  
 and is called by our Seamen St. Elmes fire,  
 it comes before a storm, and is commonly  
 thought to be a Spirit; if two appear they  
 prognosticate safety: These are known to  
 the learned by the names of *Castor* and *Pol-  
 lux*, to the *Italians* by *St. Nicholas* and *St.  
 Hermes*, by the *Spaniards* called *Corpos Santos*.  
 The Ninth day, about two of the clock  
 in the afternoon, we found the head of our  
 main mast close to the cap twisted and shive-  
 red, and we presently after found the fore-  
 top-mast crackt a little above the cap; So  
 they walled them both, and about two of  
 the clock in the morning 7 new long Boat  
 oars brake away from our Star-board quar-  
 ter with a horrid crack.

The Eleventh day, they observed and  
 made the Ship to be in latitude 48 degrees  
 46 minuts, having a great Sea all night; a-  
 bout 6 of the clock in the morning we  
 spake with Mr. Rupe in a Ship of Dart-  
 month, which came from *Marcelloes*; and  
 now is *Silly* N. E. by E. 34 leagues off;

*Corpse*  
*Eat*

*Electrical*  
*Fire*

about 9 of the clock at night we founded So  
and had 85 fathom water, small brownish fish  
pepperie sand, with a small piece of Hake gui  
Tooth, and now we are 45 leagues off the TH  
Lizard, great Seas all night, and now we ter  
see to the S. W. six tall Ships, the wind be the  
ing S. W. an

The Twelfth day being *Whitsunday*, pro  
prayer-time we found the Ships trine a for wh  
by the stern, and also the partie that was noo  
sick of the small pox now dyed, whom w Dob  
buried in the Sea, tying a bullet (as the Mac  
manner is) to his neck, and another to the tie  
leggs, turned him out at a Port-hole, giving was  
fire to a great Gun. In the afternoon on T  
Martin Juy a stripling, servant to Captain Plin  
Thomas Cammock was whipt naked at the for  
Cap-stern, with a Cat with Nine tails west  
for filching 9 great Lemmons out of the back  
Chirurgeons Cabbin, which he eat rinds an off,  
all in less than an hours time. of e

The Thirteenth day we took a Shark T  
a great one, and hoisted him aboard with of r  
his two Companions (for there is never the l  
Sharke, but hath a mate or two) that I saw  
the Pilot-fish or Pilgrim, which lay upon little  
back close to a long fin; the other hand e  
(somewhat bigger than the Pilot) above verne  
two foot long, called a Remora, it hath Wine  
scales and sticks close to the Shakes, be all ni

*man dyed*

*man whipt*

*Shark  
&  
Pilot  
&*

*Remora*



So the Whale hath the Sea-gudgeon, a small fish for his mate, marching before him, and guiding him; which I have seen likewise.

The Seamen divided the Sharke into quarters, and made more quarter about it than the Purser, when he makes five quarters of an Oxe, and after they had cooked him, he proved very rough Grain'd, not worthy of wholesome preferment; but in the afternoon we took store of Bonitoes, or Spanish Dolphins, a fish about the size of a large Mackarel, beautified with admirable variety of glittering colours in the water, and was excellent food.

The Fourteenth day we spake with a *Plimouth* man (about dinner time) bound for *New-found-land*, who having gone up west-ward sprang a leak, and now bore back for *Plimouth*. Now was *Silly* 50 leagues off, and now many of the passengers fall sick of the small Pox and Calenture.

The Sixteenth Mr. *Clarke*, who came out of the *Downs* with us, and was bound for the Isle of *Providence*, one of the summer Islands; the Spaniards having taken it a little before, though unknown to *Clarke*, her hand to Captain *Nathaniel Butler* going Governor, they now departed from us the Wind N. W. great Seas and stormie winds all night.

Whales

Geda

Sea-gudgeon

Sharke

Eat

Bonitoes

Bermudas

Bahama

The Seventeenth day, the wind at N. W. about 8 of the clock we saw 5 great Ships bound for the Chunnel, which was to the Westward of us, about two leagues off, we thought them to be Flemmings; here we expected to have met with Pirates, but were happily deceived.

The One and twentieth day, the wind S. by W. great Seas and Wind <sup>and</sup> on courses, and tryed from 5 of the clock at ternoon, till 4 in the morning, the night being very stormie and dark; we lost Mr Goodlad and his Ship, who came out with us, and bound for Boston in New-England.

The Eight and twentieth day, all the while a very great grown Sea and might winds.

Swim  
at the  
Island

Birds

June the first day in the afternoon, very thick foggie weather, we sailed by an enchanted Island, saw a great deal of filth and rubbish floating by the Ship, heard Cannibals, mardies, Sea-gulls and Crows, (Birds that alwayes frequent the shoar) but could see nothing by reason of the mist: towards Sunset, when we were past the Island, it cleared up.

14 June  
Island of  
Ice  
9 miles  
Long

The Fourteenth day of June, very foggy weather, we sailed by an Island of Ice (which lay on the Star-board side) three leagues in length mountain high, in form of



*Islands Ice  
Frozen on  
It*

*In June*

*Cold as  
January  
by the Ice*

*taken on  
Sunday not  
Eat such  
Pigots*

land, with Bayes and Capes like high clift land, and a River pouring off it into the Sea. We saw likewise two or three Foxes, or Devils skipping upon it. These Islands of Ice are congealed in the North, and brought down in the spring-time with the Current to the banks on this side *New-found-land*, and there stopt, where they dissolve at last to water; by that time we had sailed half way by it, we met with a *French Pickeroon*. Here it was as cold as in the middle of *January* in *England*, and so continued till we were some leagues beyond it.

The Sixteenth day we sounded, and found 35 fathom water, upon the bank of *New-found-land*, we cast out our hooks for Cod-fish, thick foggie weather, the Codd being taken on a Sunday morning, the *Se-*ctaries aboard threw those their servants took into the Sea again, although they wanted fresh victuals, but the Sailers were not so nice, amongst many that were taken, we had some that were wasted Fish, & it is observable and very strange, that fishes bodies do grow slender with age, their Tails and Heads retaining their former bigness; Fish of all Creatures have generally the biggest heads, and the first part that begins to taint in a fish is the head.

The Nineteenth day, Captain *Thomas Cammock*.

*Cammock* ( a near kinsman of the Earl of *Warwicks* ) now had another lad *Thomas Jones*, that dyed of the small pox at eight of the clock at night.

*Flying  
Fish*

*Grandpiscu*

*Sword Fish  
Hatched the  
Ship*

The Twentieth day, we saw a great number of Sea-bats, or Owles, called also flying fish, they are about the bigness of a Whiting, with four tinseled wings, with which they fly as long as they are wet, when pursued by other fishes. Here likewise we saw many Grandpiscus or Herring-hogs, hunting the scholes of Herrings, in the afternoon we saw a great fish called the *vehuella* or Sword fish, having a long, strong, and sharp fin like a Sword-blade on the top of his head, with which he pierced our Ship, and broke it off with striving to get loose, one of our Sailers dived and brought it aboard.

The One and twentieth day, we met with two *Bristow* men bound for *New-England*, and now we are 100 and 75 leagues off *Cape-Sable*, the sandy Cape, for so *Sable* in French signifieth, off of which lyeth the Isle of *Sable*, which is beyond *New-found-land*, where they take the *Amphibious* Creature, the *Walrus*, *Mors*, or *Sea-Horse*.

The Two and twentieth, another passenger dyed of a Consumption. Now we passed by the Southern part of *New-found-land*, with



within sight of it; the Southern part of New-found-land is said to be not above 600 leagues from England.

*June*  
The Six and twentieth day, Capt. Thomas Cammock went aboard of a Barke of 300 <sup>+ Islands of</sup> Tuns, laden with Island Wine, and but 7 <sup>Madeira</sup> men in her, and never a Gun, bound for Richmonds Island, set out by Mr. Trelaney of Plymouth, exceeding hot weather now. *in June*

The Eight and twentieth, one of Mr. Edward Ting's the undertakers men now dyed of the Phthisick.

The Nine and twentieth day, sounded at night, and found 120 fathome water, the head of the Ship struck against a rock; At 4 of the clock we descryed two sail bound for New-found-land, and so for the Streights, they told us of a general Earth-quake in New-England, of the Birth of a Monster at Boston, in the Massachusetts-Bay a mortality, and now we are two leagues off Cape Ann. *Earthquake 1639*

The Thirtieth day proved stormie, and having lost the sight of Land, we saw none untill the morning; doubtfully discovering the Coast, fearing the Lee-shore all night we bore out to Sea.

*July*  
July the first day, we founded at 8 of the clock at night, and found 93 fathome water, descryed land.

The Third day, we Anchored in the Bay of

of *Massachusetts* before *Boston*. Mr. *Tingle* other man now dyed of the small pox.

The Tenth day, I went a shore upon *Noddles Island* to Mr. *Samuel Maverick* (for my passage) the only hospitable man in the Country, giving entertainment to all Comers gratis.

Now before I proceed any further, I will not be Impertinent to give the intending planter some Instructions for the furnishing of himself with things necessary and for undertaking the Transport of his Family, or any others.

Charged  
Ship 150

To which end observe, that a Ship of 150 Tuns, with 2 Decks and a half, and 26 men, with 12 pieces of Ordnance, the charge will amount per moneth, with the Mariners, to 120 pound per moneth. It is better to let the Owners undertake for the Victualling of the Mariners, and their pay for Wages, and the Transporter only to take care of the passengers.

The common proportion of Victuals for the Ship to a Mess, being 4 men, is as followeth:

Two pieces of Beef, of 3 pound and  $\frac{1}{4}$  per piece.

Four pound of Bread.

One pound  $\frac{1}{2}$  of Pease.

Fou



Four Gallons of *Bear*, with *Mustard* and *Vinegar* for three flesh dayes in the week.

For four fish dayes, to each mess per day.

Two pieces of *Codd* or *Habberdine*, making three pieces of a fish.

One quarter of a pound of *Butter*.

Four pound of *Bread*.

Three quarters of a pound of *Cheese*.

*Bear* as before.

*Oatmeal* per day, for 50 men, Gallon 1. and so proportionable for more or fewer.

Thus you see the Ships provision, is *Beef* or *Porke*, *Fish*, *Butter*, *Cheese*, *Pease*, *Pottage*, *Water-gruel*, *Bisket*, and six shilling *Bear*.

For private fresh provision, you may carry with you (in case you, or any of yours should be sick at Sea) *Conserves* of *Roses*, *Clove-gilliflowers*, *Wormwood*, *Green-Ginger*, *Burnt-Wine*, *English Spirits*, *Prunes* to stew, *Raisons* of the *Sun*, *Currence*, *Sugar*, *Nutmeg*, *Mace*, *Cinnamon*, *Pepper* and *Ginger*, *White Bisket*, or *Spanish rusk*, *Eggs*, *Rice*, *juice* of *Lemmons* well put up to cure, or prevent the *Scurvy*. *Small Skillets*, *Pipkins*, *Porrengers*, and small *Frying pans*.

To prevent or take away *Sea sickness*, *Conserve* of *Wormwood* is very proper, but these following *Troches* I prefer before it.

First make paste of *Sugar* and *Gum-Dragagant* mixed together, then mix therewith





er of  
case a  
oules  
ld, of  
Sto-  
ng to  
e for  
s. d.  
3 0  
1 10  
1 3  
7 6  
2 6  
9 0  
5 0  
7 6  
5 0  
8 0  
8 0

Victuals for a whole year to be carried out of  
England for one man, and so for more after  
the rate.

	l.	s.	d.
Eight bushels of Meal	5	2	0
Two bushels of Pease at three shillings a bushel	{ 0	6	0
Two bushels of Oatmeal, at four and six pence the bushel	{ 0	9	0
One Gallon of Aqua vite	0	2	6
One Gallon of Oyl	0	3	6
Two Gallons of Vinegar	0	7	6
			<u>3:3:6</u>

Note.

Of Sugar and Spice, 8 pound make the  
stone, 13 stone and an half, i. e. 100 pound  
maketh the hundred, but your best way is  
to buy your Sugar there, for it is cheapest,  
but for Spice you must carry it over with  
you.

	l.	s.	d.
A Hogthead of English Beef will cost	{ 5	0	0
A Hogthead of Irish Beef will cost	2	10	0
A Barrel of Oatmeal	0	13	0
A Hogthead of Aqua-vite will cost	4	0	0
A Hogthead of Vinegar	1	0	0
A bushel of Mustard-seed	0	6	0

ctu.

A

A *Kental* of fish, Cod or Habberdine  
 112 pound, will cost if it be merchantable  
 fish, Two or three and thirty Rials a *Kental*,  
 if it be refuse you may have it for 10 or 11  
 shillings a *Kental*.

*Wooden Ware.*

A pair of Bellows	0	2	
A Skoope	0	0	
A pair of Wheels for a Cart, if you buy them in the Countrey, they will cost 3 or 4 pound	0	14	
Wheelbarrow you may have there? in England they cost	0	6	
A great pail in England will cost	0	0	
A Boat called a Canow, will cost in the Countrey ( with a pair of Paddles ) if it be a good one	3	0	
A short Oake ladder in England will cost but	0	0	
A Plough	0	3	
An Axletree	0	0	
A Cart	0	10	
For a casting shovel	0	01	
For a shovel	0	0	
For a Sack	0	2	
For a Lanthorn	0	1	
For Tobacco pipes short heads, and great 14 pence and 16 pence the grose.			



	l.	s.	d.
For clipping an hundred sheep in } England	0	4	6
For winding the Wool	0	0	8
For washing them	0	2	0
For one Garnish of Peuter	2	0	0

*that is plates & dishes &c*

Prizes of Iron Ware.

Arms for one man, but if half of your men have Armour it is sufficient, so that all have pieces and swords.	<i>to fight in armour the fashion of the days but I had that armour was for 17<sup>th</sup> cannot find anywhere</i>		
One Armour compleat, light	0	17	0
One long piece five foot, or five } and a half near Musket bore	1	2	0
One Sword	0	5	0
One Bandaleer <i>for a long powder</i>	0	1	0
One Belt	0	1	0
Twenty pound of powder	0	18	0
Sixty pound of shot or lead, pistol } and Goose shot	0	5	0

Tools for a Family of Six persons,  
and so after the rate for more.

Five broad howes at two shillings } a piece	0	10	0
Five narrow howes at 16 pence a } piece	0	6	8

C

Five

	l.	s.	d.	
Five selling Axes at 18 pence a piece	7	6		For
Two steel hand-sawes at 16 pence the piece	0	2	8	For Na
Two hand-sawes at 5 shillings a piece.	0	10	0	For
One whip saw, set and filed with box	0	10	0	Ho
A file and wrest	0	0	10	
Two Hammers 12 pence a piece	0	2	0	
Three shovels 18 pence a piece shod	4	6		On
Two spades 18 pence a piece	0	3	0	For
Two Augars	0	1	0	For
Two broad Axes at 3 shillings 8 pence a piece	0	7	4	For
Six Chissels	0	3	0	For
Three Gimblets	0	0	6	For
Two Hatchets One and twenty pence a piece	0	3	6	For
Two froes to cleave pail at 18 pence a piece	0	3		For Plat
Two hand-bills at 20 pence a piece	3	4		For
Nails of all sorts to be valued	2	0	0	for
Two pick-Axes	0	3	0	The
Three Locks, and 3 pair of Fetters	0	5	10	a
Two Currie Combs	0	0	11	
For a Brand to brand Beasts with	0	0	6	H
For a Chain and lock for a Boat	0	2		two
For a Coulter weighting 10 pound	0	3		in a
For a Hand-vise	0	2		rather
				For



	d.		l.	s.	d.
For a Pitch-fork	—	—	0	1	4
For one hundred weight of Spikes	2		5	0	
Nails and pins 120, to the hundred					
For a share	—	—	0	2	11

*Household Implements for a Family  
of six persons, and so for more or less  
after the rate.*

One Iron Pot	—	—	0	7	0
For one great Copper Kettle	—	2	0	0	
For a small Kettle	—	—	0	10	0
For a lesser Kettle	—	—	0	6	0
For one large Frying-pan	—	—	0	2	6
For a small Frying-pan	—	—	0	1	8
For a brass Morter	—	—	0	3	0
For a Spit	—	—	0	2	0
For one Grid-Iron	—	—	0	1	0
For two Skillets	—	—	0	5	0
Platters, dishes, & spoons of wood	—	—	0	4	0
For Sugar, Spice and fruits at Sea for six men	} 0 12 10				
The fraught will be for one man half a Tun.					

Having refreshed my self for a day or *Boston*  
two upon Noddles-Island, I crossed the Bay *20 or 30*  
in a small Boat to Boston, which then was *Houses*  
rather a Village, than a Town, there being

Boston

(20)

8 or 30  
Houses  
1638.

Mr Cotton  
Teacher

not above Twenty or thirty houses; and presenting my respects to Mr. *Wimborpe* the Governour, and to Mr. *Cotton* the Teacher of *Boston* Church, to whom I delivered from Mr. *Francis Quarles* the poet, the Translation of the 16, 25, 51, 88, 113, and 137. Psalms into *English* Meeter, for his approbation, being civilly treated, by all I had occasion to converse with, I returned in the Evening to my lodging.

The Twelfth day of *July*, after I had taken my leave of Mr. *Maverick*, and some other Gentlemen, I took Boat for the Eastern parts of the Countrey, and arrived at *Black point* in the Province of *Main*, which is 150 miles from *Boston*, the Fourteenth day, which makes my voyage 11 weeks and odd dayes.

The Countrey all along as I sailed, being no other than a meer Wilderness, here and there by the Sea-side a few scattered plantations, with as few houses.

About the Tenth of *August*, I hapned to walk into the Woods, not far from the Sea-side, and falling upon a piece of ground over-grown with bushes, called there *black Currance*, but differing from our *Garden Currance*, they being ripe and hanging in lovely bunches; I set up my piece against a bare Oake, with a resolution to fill my belly,

Black  
Currants

be  
ho  
th  
ing  
to  
coc  
she  
find  
take  
she  
wer  
poun  
disc  
ter  
to w  
the  
befor  
and  
had  
Rock  
perc  
the p  
on m  
up to  
ready  
who  
the G  
head  
the she  
Goat :

belly, being near half a mile from the house; of a sudden I heard a hollow thumping noise upon the Rocks approaching towards me, which made me presently to recover my piece, which I had no sooner cock'd, than a great and grim over-grown she-Wolf appears, at whom I shot, and finding her Gor-belly stuff with flesh newly taken in, I began presently to suspect that she had fallen foul upon our Goats, which were then valued ( our she Goats ) at Five pound a Goat; Therefore to make further discovery, I descended ( it being low water ) upon the Sea sands, with an intent to walk round about a neck of land where the Goats usually kept. I had not gone far before I found the footing of two Wolves, and one Goat betwixt them, whom they had driven into a hollow, betwixt two Rocks, hither I followed their footing, and perceiving by the Crowes, that there was the place of slaughter, I hung my piece upon my back, and upon all four clambered up to the top of the Rock; where I made ready my piece and shot at the dog Wolf, who was feeding upon the remainder of the Goat, which was only the fore shoulders, head and horns, the rest being devoured by the she-Wolf, even to the very hair of the Goat: and it is very observable, that when

*the Wolf  
killed  
Goats*

*american  
Bears live  
not on Flesh*



*the She-Wolf does not eat (22)*

*until the  
she has  
done*

the Wolves have kill'd a Beast, or a Hog, not a Dog-Wolf amongst them offers to eat any of it, till the she-Wolves have fill'd their paunches.

*Hurricane*

The Twenty fourth of September, being Munday about 4 of the clock in the afternoon, a fearful storm of wind began to rage, called a Hurricane. It is an impetuous wind that goes commonly about the Compass in the space of 24 hours, it began from the W. N. W. and continued till next morning, the greatest mischief it did us, was the wracking of our Shallop, and the blowing down of many tall Trees, in some places a mile together.

*Eclipse of  
Moone*

December the Tenth, happened an Eclipse of the Moon at 8 of the clock at night, it continued till after 11, as near as we could guess; in old England it began after midnight, and continued till 4 of the clock in the morning; if Seamen would make observation of the time, either of the beginning or ending of the Eclipse, or total darknes of Sun and Moon in all places where they shall happen to be, and confer their observations to some Artist, hereby the longitude of all places might be certainly known, which are now very uncertainly reported to us.

1639

1639. May, which fell out to be extreame hot and foggie, about the middle of May

kill'd

kill'd within a stones throw of our house, above four score Snakes, some of them as big as the small of my leg, black of colour, and three yards long, with a sharp horn on the tip of their tail two inches in length.

Rattle snake  
horn snake  
9 foot long

June the Six and twentieth day, very stormie, Lightning and Thunder. I heard now two of the greatest and fearfullest thunder-claps that ever were heard, I am confident. At this time we had some neighbouring Gentlemen in our house, who came to welcome me into the Countrey; where amongst variety of discourse they told me of a young Lyon (not long before) kill'd at Piscataway by an Indian of a Sea-Serpent or Snake, that lay quailed up like a Cable upon a Rock at Cape-Ann: a Boat passing by with English aboard, and two Indians, they would have shot the Serpent, but the Indians dissuaded them, saying, that if he were not kill'd out-right, they would be all in danger of their lives.

no Lyons  
so far North  
is a Red  
Panther  
Sea  
Snake

One Mr. Mittin related of a Triton or Mereman which he saw in Cascobay, the Gentleman was a great Foulter, and used to goe out with a small Boat or Canow, and fetching a compass about a small Island, (there being many small Islands in the Bay) for the advantage of a shot, was encountred

Triton

a large Tusked 600 or 800 1067  
has its fore feet (24)

It is described  
to look like  
Humane  
hands a  
Story -

Stories

with a Triton, who laying his hands upon the side of the Canow, had one of them chopped off with a Hatchet by Mr. Minin, which was in all respects like the hand of a man, the Triton presently sunk, dying the water with his purple blood, and was no more seen. The next story was told by Mr. Foxwell, now living in the province of Main, who having been to the Eastward in a Shallop, as far as Cape-Ann-a Waggon in his return was overtaken by the night, and fearing to land upon the barbarous shore, he put off a little further to Sea; about midnight they were wakened with a loud voice from the shore, calling upon Foxwell, Foxwell came a shore, two or three times; upon the Sands they saw a great fire, and Men and Women hand in hand dancing round about it in a ring, after an hour or two they vanished, and as soon as the day appeared, Foxwell puts into a small Cove, it being about three quarters flood, and traces along the shore, where he found the footing of Men, Women and Children shod with shoes; and an infinite number of brands-ends thrown up by the water, but neither Indian nor English could he meet with on the shore, nor in the woods; these with many other stories they told me, the credit whereof I will neither impeach nor enforce, but sh

fatist



satisfie my self, and I hope the Reader here-  
of, with the saying of a wise, learned and  
honourable Knight, *that there are many  
stranger things in the world, than are to be  
seen between London and Stanes.*

September the Sixth day, one Mr. John  
Hickford the Son of Mr. Hickford a Linnen-  
Draper in Cheapside, having been sometime  
in the province of *Main*, and now determi-  
ned to return for *England*, sold and kill'd  
his stock of Cattle and Hoggs, one great  
Sow he had which he made great account  
of, but being very fat, and not suspecting  
that she was with pig, he caused her to be  
kill'd, and they found 25 pigs within her  
belly; verifying the old proverb, As fruitful  
as a white sow. And now we were told  
of a sow in *Virginia* that brought forth six  
pigs, their fore-parts Lyons, their hinder-  
parts hogs. *I have read that at Bruxels,*  
*Anno 1564. a sow brought forth six pigs, the*  
*first whereof (for the last in generating is*  
*alwayes in brut beasts the first brought forth)*  
*had the head, face, arms and legs of a man,*  
*but the whole trunck of the body from the*  
*neck, was of a swine, a sodomitical monster is*  
*more like the mother than the father in the or-*  
*gans of the vegetative soul.*

25 pigs

monsters

Lotto

The Three and twentieth, I left Black-  
point, and came to *Richmonds Island* about  
three

*Tralaway  
Fishing*

three leagues to the Eastward, where Mr. Tralanie kept a fishing, Mr. John Winter a grave and discreet man was his Agent, and imployer of 60 men upon that design.

The Four and twentieth day being Monday, I went aboard the Fellowship of 100 and 70 Tuns a Flemish bottom, the Master George Luxon of Bittisford in Devonshire, several of my friends came to bid me farewell, among the rest Captain Thomas Warrington who drank to me a pint of kill-de-vil alias Rhum at a draught, at 6 of the clock in the morning we weighed Anchor and set sail for the Massachusetts-bay.

*Drank  
pint of  
Rum*

The Seven and twentieth day being Friday, we Anchored in the afternoon in the Massachusetts-bay before Boston. Next day I went aboard of Mr. Hinderson, Master of a ship of 500 Tuns, and Captain Jackson in the Queen of Bohemia a privateer, and from thence I went ashore to Boston, where I refreshed my self at an Ordinary. Next morning I was invited to a fishermans house somewhat lower within the Bay, and was there by his Wife presented with a handful of small Pearl, but none of them bore me, nor orient. From thence I crost the Bay to Dyer Charles-town, where at one Longs Ordinary I met with Captain Jackson and others walking on the back side, we spied a rattlesnake

*Small  
Pearle*

Rattle snake

4 foot  $\frac{1}{2}$   
long

Snake a yard and half long, and as thick in the middle as the small of a mans leg, on the belly yellow, her back spotted with black, russet, yellow and green, placed like scales, at her tail she had a rattle which is nothing but a hollow shelly buffness joyned, look how many years-old she is, so many rattles she hath in her tail, her neck seemed to be no bigger than ones Thumb; yet she swallowed a live Chicken, as big as one they give 4 pence for in England, presently as we were looking on. In the afternoon I returned to our Ship, being no sooner aboard but we had the sight of an Indian-Pinnace sailing by us made of Birch-bark, sewed together with the roots of spruce and white Cedar (drawn out into threads) with a deck, and trimmed with sails top and top gallant very sumptuously.

Rattle snake

yellow a  
chick+  
Indian  
Ship

The Thirtieth day of September, I went ashore upon Noddles-Island, where when I was come to Mr. Mavericks he would not let me go aboard no more, until the Ship was ready to set sail; the next day a grave and sober person described the Monster to me, that was born at Boston of one Mrs. Dyer a great Sectarie, the Nine and twentieth of June, it was (it should seem) without a head, but having horns like a Beast, and ears, scales on a rough skin like a fish

Monster

cal-



called a Thornback, legs and claws like fine  
Hawke, and in other respects as a Woman I wa  
child. I tho

The Second of October, about 9 of the scale  
clock in the morning, Mr. Mavericks Negro man  
woman came to my chamber window, and with  
in her own Countrey language and tone ner h  
sang very loud and shrill, going out to her were  
she used a great deal of respect towards from  
me, and willingly would have expressed her the u  
grief in English; but I apprehended it well  
her countenance and deportment, whereup the h  
on I repaired to my host, to learn of him that  
the cause, and resolved to intreat him ment  
her behalf, for that I understood before T  
that she had been a Queen in her own and  
Country, and observed a very humble and Davi  
dutiful garb used towards her by another streets  
Negro who was her maid. Mr. Maverick board  
was desirous to have a breed of Negroes next  
and therefore seeing she would not yield been  
perswasions to company with a Negro gave  
young man he had in his house; he which  
commanded him will'd she nill'd she to go to not o  
bed to her, which was no sooner done but no p  
she kickt him out again, this she took in Illand  
high disdain beyond her slavery, and this T  
was the cause of her grief. In the after tascot  
noon I walked into the Woods on the back Th  
side of the house, and happening into of o  
time

*Indra Queen*

*preserves*

*her*

*Dignity*

*Even*

*m*

*Slavery*

like fine broad walk (which was a sledg. way)  
 I wandered till I chanc't to spy a fruit as  
 I thought like a pine Apple plated with  
 scales, it was as big as the crown of a Wo-  
 mans hat; I made bold to step unto it,  
 with an intent to have gathered it, no soo-  
 ner had I toucht it, but hundreds of Wasps = *wasps*  
 were about me; at last I cleared my self  
 from them, being stung only by one upon  
 the upper lip, glad I was that I scaped so  
 well; But by that time I was come into  
 the house my lip was swell'd so extreamly,  
 that they hardly knew me but by my Gar-  
 ments.

The Tenth of October, I went aboard  
 and we fell down to Nantascot, here Mr.  
 Davies (Mr. Hicks the Apothecarie in Fleet-  
 streets Son-in-law) dyed of the Phthisick a-  
 board on a Sunday in the afternoon. The  
 next day Mr. Luxon our Master having  
 been ashore upon the Governours Island  
 gave me half a score very fair Pippins  
 which he brought from thence, there being  
 not one Apple-tree, nor Pear planted yet in  
 no part of the Countrey, but upon that  
 Island. *no pears  
 but at ye  
 Govern<sup>r</sup>  
 the  
 apples  
 planted*

1639

The Fifteenth day, we set sail from Nan-  
 tascot.

The Sixteenth day Mr. Robert Foster, one  
 of our passengers Preached aboard upon  
 the

the 113 Psalm; *The Lord shall preserve thy going out, & thy coming in*; The Sectaries began to quarrel with him, especially Mr + Vincent Potter, he who was afterwards questioned for a Regicide.

*Hawke  
came  
to England  
in  
October*

The Seventeenth day, towards Sun-set Lanner settled upon our main Mast-top, when it was dark I hired one of the Sailers to fetch her down, and I brought her into England with much ado, being fain to feed her with hard Eggs. After this day we had very cold weather at Sea, our deck in morning ore-spread with hoarie frost, and dangling Ifickles hung upon the Ropes. Some say the Sea is hotter in winter, than in summer; but I did not find it so.

November the Fifth day, about three o'clock in the afternoon, the Mariners observed the rising of a little black cloud to the N. W. which increasing apace, made them prepare against a coming storm, the wind in short time grew to boisterous, bringing after us a huge grown Sea, at 5 of the clock it was pitchie dark.

And the bitter storm augments; the wild winds wage War from all parts; and joyn with the Sea in rage.



The sad clouds sink in showers; you would  
have thought,

That high-swoln-seas even unto Heaven had  
wrought;

And Heaven to Seas descended: no star  
shown;

Blind night in darkness, tempests, and her  
own

Dread terrors lost; yet this dire lightning  
turns

To more fear'd light; the Sea with lightning  
Burns.

The Pilot knew not what to chuse or fly,  
Art stood amaz'd in Ambiguity.

The storm augmenting still, the next  
day about 4 of the clock afternoon we lost  
our Rudder, and with that our hopes, so  
necessary a part it is, that a ship without it,  
is like a wild horse without a bridle; yet  
Aristotle that Eag'le-ey'd Philosopher could  
not give a reason, why so small a thing as a  
Helm should rule the ship.

The

(32)

The Seventh day at night, the wind began to dye away, the next day we had leisure to repair our breaches; it continued calm till the 13 day, and all the while we saw many dead bodies of men and women floating by us.

1639  
24 apr The Four and twentieth, we arrived before Pittisford, having past before under Lundee-Island.

*about 6 weeks passage  
much sicker in returning than going*

---

---

servi  
in w  
Ah  
man  
my  
but  
Th  
think  
I hav  
chief  
prod  
will  
mans  
spes  
havin  
mult  
where



The Second 1663  
*Returned* 1671  
 VOYAGE.

I Have heard of a certain Merchant in the west of *England*, who after many great losses, walking upon the Sea-bank in a calm Sun-shining day; observing the smoothness of the Sea, coming in with a chequered or dimpled wave: Ah (quoth he) thou flattering Element; many a time hast thou inticed me to throw my self and my fortunes into thy Arms; but thou hast hitherto proved treacherous; thinking to find thee a Mother of increase, I have found thee to be the Mother of mischief and wickedness; yea the Father of prodigies; therefore, being now secure, I will trust thee no more: But mark this mans resolution a while after, *periculum maris spes lucri superat*. So fared it with me; that having escaped the dangers of one Voyage, must needs put on a resolution for a second, wherein I plowed many a churlish billow



with little or no advantage, but rather to my loss and detriment. In the setting down, whereof I purpose not to insist in a methodical way, but according to my quality, in a plain and brief relation as I have done already; for I perceive, if I used all the Art that possibly I could, it would be difficult to please all, for all mens eyes, ears, faith, judgement, are not of a size. There be a sort of stagnant stinking spirits, who, like flies, lye sucking at the botches of carnal pleasures, and never travelled so much Sea, as is between *Heth-ferry*, and *Lyon-Key*; yet notwithstanding, (sitting in the Chair of the scornful over their whisks and draughts of intoxication) will desperately censure the relations of the greatest Travellers. It was a good proviso of a learned man, never to report wonders, for in so doing, of the greatest he will be sure not to be believed, but laughed at, which certainly bewraies their ignorance and want of discretion. Of Fools and Mad-men then I shall take no care, I will not invite these in the least to honour me with a glance from their supercilious eyes; but rather advise them to keep their inspection for their fine-tongued Romances, and playes. This homely piece, I protest ingenuously, is prepared for such only who well know how to make use of their

charitable constructions towards works of this nature, to whom I submit my self in all my faculties, and proceed in my second voyage.

23 May 1663

Anno 1663. May the Three and twentieth, I went down to *Gravesend*, it being *Saturday* I lay ashore till *Monday* the fifth, about 11 a clock at night, I went aboard the Society belonging to *Boston* in the *Massachusetts* a Colony of English in *New-England*, of 200 and 20 Tun, carrying 16 Iron Guns most unserviceable, man'd with 33 sailers, and 77 passengers, men, women and children.

The Six and twentieth day, about 6 of the clock in the morning we weighed Anchor, and fell down with the tide three or four miles below *Gravesend*.

The Seven and twentieth in the afternoon, we weighed Anchor and came into the *Hope* before *Deal-Castle*, here we were wind bound till

*The Downs*

The 30 day, we set sail out of the *Doums*, being *Saturday* about 9 of the clock in the morning, about 4 of the clock in the afternoon we came up with *Beachy* by *W. at Nore*.

The One and thirtieth at 4 of the clock in the morning we came up with the *Isle of Wight*, at 4 of the clock in the afternoon

we had *Portland* N. N. W. of us, 6 leagues off, the wind being then at N. W. by N. at 5 of the clock we came to *Dartmouth*, the wind W. S. W.

*June* the first day, being *Monday* about 4 of the clock *Plimouth* was about 9 leagues off, our course W. S. W. the *Start* bore North distant about 6 leagues from whence our reckonings began; the wind now E. N. E. a fair gale.

The second day the *Lizard* bore N. N. W. in the latitude 51. 300 leagues from *Cape Cod* in *New England*, our course W. and by S. One of our passengers now dyed of Consumption.

The Fifth day we steered S. W. observed and found the ship in latitude 47 degrees and 44 minutes.

The Tenth day observed and found the ship in latitude 49 degrees, and 24 minutes.

The Five and twentieth day, about 3 of the clock in the morning we discovered land, about 6 of the clock *Flowers*, so called from abundance of flowers, and *Corvo* from a multitude of *Crowes*; two of the *Azores* or western Islands, in the *Atlantique Ocean* not above 250 leagues from *Lisbon* bore N. W. of us some 3 leagues off, we steered away W. by W. observed and found *Flowers* to be in the Southern part in latitude 39

*Azorian  
Isles of  
Flowers  
named  
from Flowers*



agrees 13 minuts, we descryed a Village and  
 a small Church or Chappel seated in a plea-  
 sant valley to the Easter-side of the Island,  
 the whole Island is rockie and mountainous  
 about 8 miles in compafs, stored with Corn,  
 Wine and Goats, and inhabited by out-  
 law'd *Portingals*, the Town they call *Santa*  
*Cruz*. *Corvo* is not far from this, I supposed  
 two or three leagues, a meer mountain, and  
 very high and steep on all sides, cloathed  
 with tall wood on the very top, uninhabi-  
 ted, but the *Flowreans* here keep some num-  
 ber of Goats.

The Seven and twentieth day, 30 leagues  
 to the westward of these Islands we met  
 with a small Vessel stoln from *Jamsico*, but  
 no men in her, and those of several nations,  
*English, French, Scotch, Dutch* almost sa-  
 tisfied, having been out as they told us, by  
 reason of calms, three moneths, bound for  
*Holland*.

July the sixth, calm now for two or  
 three dayes, our men went out to swim,  
 some hoisted the *Shallop* out and took divers  
*Turtles*, there being an infinite number of  
 them all over the Sea as far as we could  
 see, and a man may ken at Sea in a clear  
 steem at 20 miles, they floated upon the top of  
 the water being a sleep, and driving gently  
 upon them with the *Shallop*, of a sudden  
 they

*Island*

*Flowers*

*+*

*Corvo*

*Tall Wood*

*Turtles all  
 over the Sea*

*Turtle  
3 Hearts*

*Long life  
in the heart  
of a Frog  
& pike*

*some shales  
instance  
of long life  
in a pike*

they took hold of their hinder legs and lifted them into the boat, if they be not very nimble they awake and presently dive under water; when they were brought aboard they sob'd and wept exceedingly, continuing to do so till the next day that we killed them, by chopping off their heads, and having taken off their shells ( that on their back being fairest, is called a Gally patch ) we opened the body and took out three hearts in one case, and ( which was more strange ) we perceived motion in the hearts ten hours after they were taken out. I have observed in England in my youthfull dayes the like in the heart of a Pike, and the heart of a Frog, which will leap and skip as nimbly as the Frog used to do when it was alive from whom it was taken. Likewise the heart of a Pig will stir after it is exenterated. Being at a friends house in Cambridg-shire, the Cook-maid making ready to slaughter a Pig, she put the hinder parts between her legs as the usual manner is, and taking the snout in her left hand with a long knife she stuck the Pig and cut the small end of the heart almost in two, letting it bleed as long as any blood came forth, then throwing of it into a Kettle of boiling water, the Pig swam twice round about the kettle, when taking of it out

the dresser she rubd it with powdered Rozen and stript off the hair, and as she was cutting off the hinder pettito, the *Pig* lifts up his head with open mouth, as if it would have bitten: well, the belly was cut up, and the entrails drawn out, and the heart laid upon the board, which notwithstanding the wound it received had motion in it, above four hours after; there were several of the Family by, with my self, and we could not otherwayes conclude but that the *Pig* was bewitched; but this by the way. Of the Sea Turtles there be five sorts, first the Trunk-turtle which is biggest, Secondly, the Loggerhead-turtle. Thirdly, the Hawk-bill-turtle, which with its bill will bite horribly. Fourthly, the Green-turtle which is best for food, it is affirmed that the feeding upon this Turtle for a twelve moneth, forbearing all other kind of food will cure absolutely Consumptions, and the great pox; They are a very delicate food, and their Eggs are very wholesome and restorative, it is an *Amphibious* Creature going ashore, the male throws the female on her back when he couples with her, which is termed cooting, their Eggs grown to perfection the female goes ashore again and making a hole in the Sand, there layes her Eggs which are numerous, I have seen a peck

*lives*

*Species  
of  
Turtle*

*Virtues*

*Coupling*



peck

of Eggs taken out of one Turtle; when they have laid they cover the hole again with sand, and return to the Sea never looking after her Eggs, which hatching in the sand and coming to some strength break out and repair to the Sea. Having fill'd our bellies with Turtles and Bonito's, called *Spanish* Dolphins excellently well cooked both of them, the wind blowing fair,

See Wad

The Eighth day we spread our sails and went on our voyage, after a while we met with abundance of Sea-weeds called Gull-weed coming out of the Bay of Mexico and firr-trees floating on the Sea, observe and found the Ship to be in 39 degrees and 49 minuts.

Four Trees

The Fifteenth day we took a young Sharke about three foot long, which being drest and dished by a young Merchant passenger happened to be very good fish having very white flesh in flakes like Cod but delicately curl'd, the back-bone which is perfectly round, joynted with short joynts, the space between not above a quarter of an inch thick, separated they make fine Table-men, being wrought on both sides with curious works.

Sharkes  
Spines  
Round

The One and twentieth thick haffie were taken.

The Five and twentieth we met with

Plimouth

*Plimouth* man come from *St. Malloes* in *France*, 10 weeks out, laden with cloath, fruit, and honey, bound for *Boston* in *New-England*.

The Six and twentieth we had sight of land.

The Seven and twentieth we Anchored at *Nantascot*, in the afternoon I went aboard of a *Ketch*, with some other of our passengers, in hope to get to *Boston* that night; but the Master of the *Ketch* would not consent.

The Eight and twentieth being *Tuesday*, in the morning about 5 of the clock he lent us his *Shallop* and three of his men, who brought us to the western end of the town where we landed, and having gratified the men, we repaired to an Ordinary (for so they call their Taverns there) where we were provided with a liberal cup of burnt Madera-wine, and store of plum-cake, about ten of the clock I went about my Affairs.

Before I pursue my Voyage to an end, I shall give you to understand what Countrie *New-England* is. *New-England* is that part of *America*, which together with *Virginia*, *Mary-land*, and *Nova-scotia* were by the Indians called (by one name) *Wingadaxoa* dacoa, after the discovery by Sir *Walter Rawleigh*

arrived  
July 24  
1663

*New England  
from 40 to 46*

*rather  
from  
41 to 45*

*and  
North River*

*Depth of  
the Sea*

Rawleigh they were named *Virginia*, and remained untill King *James* divided the Countrey into Provinces. *New-England* then is all that tract of land that lyes between the Northerly latitudes of 40 and 46, that is from *De-la-ware-Bay* to *New-found-land*, some will have it to be in latitude from 41 to 45. in King *James's* Letters Patents to the Council of *Plimouth* in *Devonshire* from 40 to 48 of the same latitude, it is judged to be an Island, surrounded on the North with the spacious River of *Canada*, on the South with *Mahagan* or *Hudsons* River, having their rise, as it is thought, from two great lakes not far off one another, the Sea lyes East and South from the land, and is very deep, some say that the depth of the Sea being measured with line and plummet, seldom exceeds two or three miles, except in some places near the *Siberian*-shores, and about *Pontus*, observed by *Pliny*. *Sir Francis Drake* threw out 7 Hogsheads of line near *Porto-bello* and found no bottom, but whether this be true or no, or that they were deceived by the Currents carrying away their lead and line, this is certainly true, that there is more Sea in the Western than the Eastern Hemisphere, on the shore in more places than one at spring-tides, that is at the full or new of the moon, the



*Sea rise  
18 feet*

the Sea riseth 18 foot perpendicular, the reason of this great flow of waters I refer to the learned, onely by the way I shall acquaint you with two reasons for the ebbing and flowing of the Sea; the one delivered in Common conference, the other in a Sermon at Boston in the Massachusetts-Bay by an eminent man; The first was, *that God and his spirit moving upon the waters caused the motion;* the other, *that the spirit of the waters gathered the waters together; as the spirit of Christ gathered Souls.*

The shore is Rockie, with high cliffs, having a multitude of considerable Harbours; many of which are capacious enough for a Navy of 500 sail, one of a thousand, the Countrie within Rockie and mountainous, full of tall wood, one stately mountain there is surmounting the rest, about four score mile from the Sea: The description of it you have in my rarities of *New-England*, between the mountains are many ample rich and pregnant valleys as ever eye beheld, beset on each side with variety of goodly Trees, the grass man-high unmowed, uneaten and uselesly withering; within these valleys are spacious lakes or ponds well stored with Fish and Beavers; the original of all the great Rivers in the Countrie, of which there are many with lesser streams

*Rocky Shore*

*good harbors*

*in England*

*fine  
Country*

*Good Soil**Large  
Trees*

streams ( wherein are an infinite of fish )  
 manifesting the goodnes of the soil which  
 is black, red-clay, gravel, sand, loom, and  
 very deep in some places, as in the valleys  
 and swamps, which are low grounds and  
 bottoms infinitely thick set with Trees and  
 Bushes of all sorts for the most part; o-  
 thers having no other shrub or Tree grow-  
 ing, but spruce, under the shades whereof you  
 may freely walk two or three mile toge-  
 ther; being goodly large Trees, and conve-  
 nient for masts and sail-yards. The whole  
 Countrie produceth springs in abundance  
 replenished with excellent waters, having  
 all the properties ascribed to the best in the  
 world.

*Swift is't in pace, light poiz'd, to look in  
 clear,*

*And quick in boiling ( which esteemed  
 were )*

*Such qualities, as rightly understood  
 Withouten these no water could be good.*

*Medicinal  
Spring*

One Spring there is, at Black-point in the  
 Province of Main, coming out of muddy-clay  
 that will colour a spade, as if hatcht with sil-  
 ver, it is purgative and cures scabs and Itch,  
 &c.

The Mountains and Rocky Hills are  
 richly furnished with mines of Lead, Silver,  
 Cop-

fifth) Copper, Tin, and divers sorts of minerals, branching out even to their summits, where in small Crannies you may meet with threds of perfect silver; yet have the *English* no law to open any of them, whether out of ignorance or fear of bringing a forraign Enemy upon them, or (like the dog in the manger) to keep their Sovereign from partaking of the benefits, who certainly may claim an interest in them as his due, being eminently a gift proceeding from divine bounty to him; no person *Isa. 45. 3.* can pretend interest in Gold, Silver, or Copper by the law of Nations, but the Sovereign Prince; but the subjects of our King have a right to mines discovered in their own Lands and inheritances; So as that every tenth Tun of such Ore is to be paid to the proprietors of such lands, and not to the state, if it be not a mine-Royal: if it prove to be a mine-Royal, every fifth Tun of all such Ore as shall hold Gold or Silver worth refining, is to be rendered to the King. *The learned Judges of our Kingdom have long since concluded, that although the Gold or Silver contained in the base mettals of a mine in the land of a Subject, be of less value than the base mettall; yet if the Gold or Silver do countervail the charge of refining it, or be more worth than the base mettall spent*



in refining it, that then it is a mine-Roy  
and as well the base mettall as the Gold  
Silver in it belongs by prerogative to the  
Crown.

*Bones*

*Slate Tables*

*Crystals  
like Fire*

*g'lderng /au*

*on Heat*

*+  
Cold*

The stones in the Countrey are for the  
most mettall-stone, free-stone, pebble, slate,  
none that will run to lime, of which there  
have great want, of the slate you may  
make Tables easie to be split to the thick-  
ness of an inch, or thicker if you please  
and long enough for a dozen men to sit at.  
Precious stones there are too, but if you de-  
sire to know further of them, see the Ran-  
cies of New-England; onely let me add  
this observation by the way, that Cry-  
stals set in the Sun taketh fire, and setteth  
Tow or brown Paper on fire held to it.  
There is likewise a sort of glittering sand  
which is altogether as good as the glass  
powder brought from the Indies to dress  
up Ink on paper newly written. The cli-  
mate is reasonably temperate, hotter in  
Summer, and colder in Winter than with  
us, agrees with our Constitutions better than  
hotter Climates, these are limbeckes to our  
dies, forraign heat will extract the inward and  
adventitious heat consume the natural, so much  
more heat any man receives outwardly from the  
heat of the Sun, so much more wants he the  
same inwardly, which is one reason why  
they

they are able to receive more and larger draughts of Brandy, & the like strong spirits than in England without offence. Cold is less tolerable than heat, this a friend to nature, that an enemy. Many are of opinion that the greatest enemies of life, consisting of heat and moisture, is cold and dryness, the extremity of cold is more easie to be endured than extremity of heat, the violent sharpness of winter, than the fiery raging of Summer. To conclude, they are both bad, too much heat brings a hot Feaver, too much cold diminisheth the flesh, withers the face, hollows the eyes, quencheth natural heat, peelth the hair, and procureth baldness.

Astronomers have taken special knowledge of the number of 1024 of the principal apparent noted Stars of all the rest, besides the 7 Planets, and the 12 Signs, and it is agreed upon that there are more Stars under the Northern-pole, than under the Southern, the number of Stars under both poles are innumerable to us; but not to the Almighty Creator of Heaven and Earth, who calleth them all by their names. *Isai.*

40. *Levate in excelsum oculos vestros & videte quis creavit hæc? quis educit in numero miliniam eorum & omnia suis nominibus vocat?* In January 1668. two Suns appeared and two Moons. The year before was published the Suns prerogative, vindicated by

Alex-

or Heat

&  
Cold -

Stars

2 Suns

2 Moons

Alexander Nowel a young student at Harvard-Colledge in the Massachusetts Colony which was as followeth.

Mathematicians have that privilege above other Philosophers, that their foundations are so founded upon, and proved by demonstration, that reason volens nolens must approve of them, when they are once viewed by the eye of the intellect, ipso facto it grants a probation est; if upon those foundations he raises famous Architectures, which are inseparably joyned in, and joyned to their ground-works, yet are not their Elements of such vast extensions, to have their dimensions adequated with the machine of the primum mobile, and so include the Fabrick of created beings; but there are spheres above the sphere of their Activity, and Orbs placed above the reach of their Instruments, which will non-plus the most accurate inquisitors, at least in reference to an accurate scrutiny: hence dissensions about Celestial bodies, whether the planets have any natural light, has been a question, proving that they borrow their light from the Sun: he being the primitive, they derivatives; he the Augmentum primum, they Orta, who though they have light in se, yet not ex se. This assertion is not expugned by Geocentrick systems, nor produce sense and Antiquity to support their suppositions; nor oppugned by Heliocentrick



who deduce their Hypothesis from reason, and new observations: for, quicquid in ambitu alicujus circuli actu diffusum, comprehenditur, id in centro ejusdem continetur potentia collectum. Should I put the question to the vote, questionless the major part of modern Astronomers would carry it affirmatively; but a testimony being Inartificialis Argumentum, I shall found my position upon a more Artificial Basis. As for the multiplication of Eclipses which some fear, it's needless, for the extent of the Cone of the earths shadow (à Centro terræ) being 250 Semidiameters, it cannot reach Mars; Venus and Mercury never oppose the Sun. It has been observed by the help of Optick Tubes, that Venus has divers faces, according to her diverse position to the Sun. Some affirm the same of Mercury, but he's not so liable to observation, being seldom clear of the radiancy of the Sun. The superior Planets, being above the Sun, turn the same side to the Sun, as they do to us. Venus and Mars are more lucid in their Perihelion, than in their Aphelion. The Telescope may convince us of this truth; Evincit enim crassæ, opacæ & dissimilium plane partium corpora, planctas esse. Lastly God made the Sun and Moon, the two greater lights (though not the greater lucid bodies) that the Moons light is adventitious, follows from her invisibilitie

in a central Eclipse: hence the other planets are destitute of native light; nam à major ad minus valet consequentia negativé.

In the year 1664. a Star or Comet appeared in New-England in December in the South-East, rising constantly about one o'clock in the morning, carrying the Sun lower and lower till it came into the West and then bare it directly before it; the Star itself was of a duskyish red, the tail of the colour of *via lactea*, or the milkie way. A fortnight after it appeared again rising higher near the Nadir or point over our heads; of the same form and colour, which hear the former Scholar.

Comets (say Naturalists) proceed from natural causes, but they oft preceed preternatural effects. That they have been Antecedents to strange consequents is an universal truth and proved by particulars, viz. That which hung over Hierusalem before its extirpation by Vespasian, that vertical to Germany, before those bloody Wars &c. So that experience Attests, and reason Assents, that they have served for sad Prologues to Tragical Epilogues. For the future, preludiums to what even they'l prove, may be proved by consequence, they hain't suffered a privation of their powerful Energie. Dr. Ward to salve Contests distinguishes between Cometaida, which

Sublunary exhalations, and Comets, which are  
 heavenly bodies, coeuous with the Stars; the  
 cause of the inequality of whose motion, is  
 their Apoge and Periges. Concerning the height  
 of the late Comets Orb, because of the defici-  
 ency of Instruments, here's pars deficiens.  
 As for its motion December 10. 'twas about  
 the middle of Virgo. Jan. 24. 26 deg. Aries.  
 Some observe that Comets commonly follow a  
 Conjunction of the superiour planets. Astro-  
 nomers attribute much to the predominancy of  
 that planet which rules it, which they judge by  
 the Colour; a dull leaden colour, claims Sa-  
 turn for his Lord; bright, Jupiter; Red, Mars;  
 Golden, Sol; Yellow, Venus; variable, Mercury;  
 pale, Luna. Also to the Aspects it receives  
 from other planets, the sign it is in, and the  
 house of the Heavens in which it first was.  
 Hence some may judge a scheme of the Heavens  
 necessary, but unless Calculated for its certain  
 rise (which is uncertain) it's adjudged by the  
 many, judicious, superfluous. Some put much trust or  
 virtue in the tail, terming it the Ignomon, &c.  
 But that is probable of all, which has been ob-  
 served of some, that it's alwayes opposite to  
 the Sun; hence when the Sun is at the Meri-  
 dian of the Antipodes it turns, &c. Which  
 Regiomont observed of that in 1475. and  
 Keckertman of that in 1607. Longomonta-  
 nus observes of that in 1618. that its first



appearance was vertical to Germany and went Northward, so its effect began there and made the like progress: it's rational that as a cause, it should operate most powerfully on those in whose Zenith it is, as the meridional Altitude; nor is it irrational, as a sign, it should presage somewhat to all things in whose Horizon it appears; for in real Relata se mutuo inferunt, hence signum in signatum, and the signifier implies a signified. Diverse desire to be certified of the event; he is wise that knows it. Some presume propositionally to specificate from generals truth; others desperately deny generals and all; of whom it's a truth, Incidunt in Scyllam. Noble Ticho concludes, (with whom I conclude) that it's not rational particularly to determine the sequel; for should any, it would be only a contingent Axiom, and proceed from fact, therefore of no necessary consequence, and may produce only opinion.

A friend of mine shewed me a little Treatise written and printed in the Massachusetts-Bay by B. D. Intituled An Astronomical description of the late Comet, or blazing Star, as it appeared in New-England in the Ninth, Tenth, Eleventh, and the beginning of the Twelfth month, 1664. printed at Cambridge by Samuel Green 1665. An interesting piece, but because I could not peruse

my friend to part with it, I took out some short notes being straitned in time, which are as followes.

Comets are distinguished in respect of their figure, according to the divers aspects of the Sun, into *Barbute*, *Caudate*, and *Crinite*. 1. When the stream like a beard goes before the body. 2. When the stream follows the body. 3. When the stream goes right up into the Heavens.

A Comet is said to be Vertical to any people, when the body of the Comet passeth over their heads.

The light of the Comet alters and varies according to the diverse Aspects of the Sun enlightning it.

Some took notice of it in the beginning of November.

In Anno Dom. 1668. July the Fifteenth happened an Eclipse of the moon from 9 of the clock at night, till after 11, digits 9, and 35 minutes.

In November following appeared a Star between the horns of the Moon in the midst.

In Anno Dom. 1669. about the middle of June at 4 of the clock in the afternoon, appeared a Rain-bow reverst, and at night about 10 of the clock we had a Lunar Rain-bow.

of the Stars

The Indians so far as I could perceive have but little knowledge of the Stars and Planets, observing the Sun and Moon only, the dividers of time into dayes and years; they being nearer to the Equinoctial-line by 10 degrees, have their dayes and nights more equally divided, being in Summer two hours shorter, in Winter two hours longer than they are in England. The 11 of June the Sun riseth at 4 and 26 minutes and setteth at 7 & 34 minutes; in December the 13 the shortest day, the Sun riseth at 4 and 35 minutes, and setteth at 4 and 27 minutes.

Spring  
begins

Storms

Hurricanes

Mid-March their Spring begins, in April they have Rain and Thunder; So again in Michaelmas, about which season they have either before Michaelmas or after outrageous storms of Wind and Rain. It's observable that there is no part of the World, which hath not some certain times of out-rageous storms. We have upon our Coast in England a Michaelmas flaw, that seldom fails: in the West-Indies in August and September the forcible North-wind, which though some call Tuffins or Hurricanes we must distinguish, for a right Hurricane is (as I have said before) an impetuous wind that goes about the Compass in the space of 24 hours, in such a storm the Lord Willoughby



of Parham Governour of the Barbadoes  
 was cast away, going with a Fleet to reco-  
 ver St. Christophers from the French,  
 Anno Dom. 1666. July. Cold weather be-  
 gins with the middle of November, the  
 winter's perpetually freezing, inso much that  
 their Rivers and salt-Bayes are frozen over  
 and passable for Men, Horse, Oxen and  
 Carts: *Aquore cum gelido zephyrus fer-*  
*xenis Cymbo.* The North-west wind is the  
 sharpest wind in the Countrey. In England  
 most of the cold winds and weathers come  
 from the Sea, and those seats that are nearest  
 the Sea-coasts in England are accounted  
 unwholsome, but not so in New England,  
 for in the extremity of winter the North-  
 East and South-wind coming from the Sea  
 produceth warm weather, only the North-  
 West-wind coming over land from the  
 white mountains (which are alwayes (ex-  
 cept in August) covered with snow) is the  
 cause of extreame cold weather, alwayes ac-  
 companied with deep snowes and bitter  
 frosts, the snow for the most part four and six  
 foot deep, which melting on the superficies  
 with the heat of the Sun, (for the most  
 part shining out clearly every day) and  
 freezing again in the night makes a crust  
 upon the snow sufficient to bear a man walk-  
 ing with snow-shoes upon it. And at this

*Severe cold*

*Causes of*  
*cold*

*Snow*  
*Deep*

Hunting

Moose Deer

Little bla  
Cloud NW  
a storm  
Expuesprognostic  
of  
Weather

season the Indians go forth on hunting the v  
 Deer and Moose twenty, thirty, forty mile wind  
 up into the Countrie. Their Summer is the S  
 and dry proper for their Indian wheat wind  
 which thrives best in a hot and dry season. So lo  
 the skie for the most part Summer and Win upon  
 ter very clear and serene; if they see a little of th  
 black cloud in the North-West, no bigger the v  
 than a man may cover with his Hat, they nefs  
 expect a following storm, the cloud of w  
 short time spreading round about the Ho that a  
 rizon accompanied with violent gusts of they  
 wind, rain, and many times lightning and wind  
 terrible thunder. In all Countries the of th  
 have observations how the weather will fall bow  
 out, and these rules following are observable the S  
 in New-England. If the Moon look bright if a d  
 and fair, look for fair weather, also the ap the S  
 peering of one Rainbow after a storm, is and r  
 known sign of fair weather; if mists come cat in  
 down from the Hills, or descend from the the S  
 Heavens, and settle in the valleys, they pro the W  
 mise fair hot weather; mists in the Eve appear  
 ning shew a fair hot day on the morrow that n  
 the like when mists rise from waters in the  
 Evening. The obscuring of the smaller Scrd  
 Stars is a certain sign of Tempests approach  
 ing; the oft changing of the wind is also a Sed f  
 fore-runner of a storm; the resounding of bres  
 the Sea from the shore, and murmuring of the

ing the winds in the woods without apparent  
 mile wind, sheweth wind to follow : shooting of  
 is the Stars ( as they call it ) is an usual sign of  
 hear wind from that quarter the Star came from.  
 reason. So look whether the resounding of the Sea  
 Win upon the shore be on the East or West side  
 a little of the dwelling, out of that quarter will  
 bigger the wind proceed the next day. The red-  
 ness of the sky in the morning, is a token  
 of winds, or rain or both: if the Circles  
 that appear about the Sun be red and broken,  
 they portend wind; if thick and dark,  
 wind, snow and rain; the like may be said  
 of the Circles about the moon. If two rain-  
 bowes appear, they are a sign of rain; If  
 the Sun or Moon look pale, look for rain;  
 bright if a dark cloud be at Sun rising, in which  
 the Sun soon after is hid, it will dissolve it,  
 and rain will follow; *nebula ascendens indi-*  
*cat imbrēs, nebula descendens serenitatem.* If  
 the Sun seem greater in the East, than in  
 the West about Sun-setting, and that there  
 appears a black cloud, you may expect rain  
 that night, or the day following.

in the  
 smaller *Sed rubens Cælum cras indicat esse sere-*  
*num,*  
 also *Sed si mane rubet venturos indicat Im-*  
*brēs.*

*prognostice  
 weather*



To conclude; if the white hills look clear and conspicuous, it is a sign of fair weather; if black and cloudy, of rain; if yellow, it is a certain sign of snow shortly to ensue.

*Sphera*

In *Anno Dom.* 1667. March, appeared a sign in the Heavens in the form of a Sphera, pointing directly to the West: and in the year following on the third day of April, being Friday, there was a terrible Earthquake, before that a very great one in 1638, and another in 58 and in 166 $\frac{2}{3}$ . January 26, 27, & 28. (which was the year before

*Earthquakes*

I came thither) there were Earthquakes for 7 times in the space of three dayes. Earthquakes are frequent in the Countrey: some suppose that the white mountains were first raised by Earthquakes, they are hollow as may be guessed by the resounding of the rain upon the level on the top. The Indians told us of a River whose course was not only stopt by an Earthquake in 1668 (as near as I can remember) but the whole River swallowed up. And I have heard it reported from credible persons, that (whilst I was there in the Countrey) there happened a terrible Earthquake amongst the French, rending a huge Rock asunder even to the center, wherein was a vast hollow of an immeasurable depth, out of which came many infernal Spirits. I shall

*Infernal  
Spirits*

conclude this discourse of Earthquakes, with that which came from the Pen of our Royal Martyr King Charles the First; *A storm at Sea wants not its terrour, but an Earthquake, shaking the very foundation of all, the World hath nothing more of horror. And now I come to the plants of the Countrey.*

The plants in New-England for the variety, number, beauty, and vertues, may stand in Competition with the plants of any Countrey in Europe. Johnson hath added to Gerard's Herbal 300. and Parkinson mentioneth many more; had they been in New-England they might have found 1000 at least never heard of nor seen by any Englishman before: 'Tis true, the Countrey hath no Bonerets, or Tartarlambs, no glittering coloured Tulips; but here you have the American Mary-Gold, the Earth-nut bearing a princely Flower, the beautiful leaved Pirola, the honied Colibry, &c. They are generally of (somewhat) a more masculine vertue, than any of the same species in England, but not in so terrible a degree, as to be mischievous or ineffectual to our English bodies. It is affirmed by some that no forraign Drugg or Simple can be so proper to Englishmen as their own, for the quantity of Opium which Turks do safely take

I shall kill four Englishmen, and that which will

Plants

+  
Humong  
Bird  
plant

Opium

of the Picos Solis or Jerusalem Salve which  
is the Apros, which is an Earth Nut

102

Opium  
Takena  
Nauseous  
Emetic  
poisoning  
Indians

salve their wounds within a day, will not re-  
 cure an Englishman in three. To which I  
 answer that it is custom that brings the  
 Turks to the familiar use of Opium. You  
 may have heard of a Taylor in Kent, who  
 being afflicted with want of sleep ventured  
 upon Opium, taking at first a grain, and in-  
 creasing of it till it came to an ounce,  
 which quantitie he took as familiarly as a  
 Turk, without any harm, more than that  
 he could not sleep without it. The English  
 in New-England take white Hellebore, which  
 operates as fairly with them, as with the  
 Indians, who sleeping of it in water some-  
 time, give it to young lads gathered toge-  
 ther a purpose to drink, if it come up they  
 force them to drink again their vomit,  
 (which they save in a Birchen-dish) till it  
 stayes with them, & he that gets the victory  
 of it is made Captain of the other lads for  
 that year. There is a plant likewise, called  
 for want of a name *Clownes wound wort* by  
 the English, though it be not the same, that  
 will heal a green wound in 24 hours, if a  
 wise man have the ordering of it. Thus  
 much for the general, I shall now begin to  
 discover unto you the plants more particu-  
 larly, and I shall first begin with Trees,  
 and of them, first with such as are called  
 in Scripture Trees of God, that is great  
 Trees,



Trees, that grow of themselves without planting. Psal. 104. 16, 17. *Satiantur arbores Jehovæ, cedri libani quas plantavit; (ubi arvicula nidificent) abietes domicilia ciconia.*

The Herons take great delight to sit basking *on Trees* upon the tops of these Trees. And I shall not be over large in any, having written of them in my Treatise of the rarities of *New-England*, to which I refer you.

The *Oake* I have given you an account of, and the kinds; I shall add the ordering of *Red Oaks* for Wainscot. When they have cut it down and clear'd it from the branches, they pitch the body of the Tree in a *Wainscot* muddy place in a River, with the head downward for some time, afterwards they draw it out, and when it is seasoned sufficiently, they saw it into boards for Wainscot, and it will branch out into curious works.

There is an admirable rare Creature in shape like a *Buck*; with Horns, of a gummy *Tree* substance, which I have often found in the *Buck* fall of the leaf upon the ground amongst the withered leaves; a living Creature I cannot call it; having only the sign of a mouth *a species of* and eyes: seldom or never shall you meet *horned* with any of them whole, but the head and horns, or the hinder parts, broken off from *Fungus* the rest; the *Indians* call them *Tree-Bucks*, and have a superstitious saying (for I believe they

they never see any of them living) that  
 they can see a Tree-Buck walking upon the  
 branches of an Oake when they go out in the  
 morning to hunt, they shall have good luck  
 that day. What they are good for I know  
 not, but certainly there is some more than  
 ordinary vertue in them. It is true that no  
 thing in nature is superfluous, and we have  
 the Scripture to back it, that God creates  
 nothing in vain. The like Creatures they  
 have at the Barbadoes which they call Negro  
 heads, found in the Sands, about two inches  
 long, with forehead, eyes, nose, mouth, chin  
 and part of the neck, they are alwayes found  
 loose in the Sands without any foot, it is  
 black as Jet, but whence it comes they know  
 not. I have read likewise, that in the Can-  
 ries or Fortunate-Islands, there is found a  
 raine Creature, which Boys bring home from the  
 mountains as oft as they would, and name  
 them Tudesquels, or little Germans: for they  
 were dry'd dead Carcases, almost three foot  
 high, which any boy did easily carry in one of the  
 palms of his hand, and they were of an human  
 maneshape; but the whole dead Carcase was  
 clearly like unto Parchment, and their bones  
 were flexible, as it were gristles: against the  
 Sun, also, their bowels and intestines were  
 seen. Surely (saith my Authour) the destroy'd  
 race of the Pigmies was there. There

probably  
 some large  
 Natt of  
 Tree-Spell

The Inhabitants said the natural  
 way of the dry - probably the  
 way of the sea forced the water

) that also many times found upon the leaves of  
 upon the Oake a Creature like a Frog, being as  
 out thin as a leaf, and transparent, as yellow as  
 good Gold, with little fiery red eyes, the English  
 I know call them Tree-frogs or Tree-toads ( but  
 ore of Tree-toads I shall have occasion to speak  
 that in another place ) they are said to be vene-  
 we- rous, but may be safely used, being ad-  
 I cre- mirable to stop womens over-flowing cour-  
 res- ses hung about their necks in a Taffetic  
 Negre bag.

*might mistake a Red Berry for the*  
 Captain Smith writes that in New-Eng- *Kermes*  
 sh, land there growes a certain berry called *Berry*  
 yes for Kermes, worth 10 shillings a pound, and had  
 , it has been formerly sold for 30 or 40 shillings a  
 they ke pound, which may yearly be gathered in good  
 e quantity. I have sought for this berry, he  
 and as speaks of, as a man should seek for a needle  
 from in a bottle of Hay, but could never light  
 d name upon it; unless that kind of Solomon seal  
 for the called by the English Treacle-berry be it.  
 foot Gerard our famous Herbalist writes that they  
 e of grow upon a little Tree called Scarlet-Oake, the *Kermes Oake*  
 an leaves have one sharp prickle at the end of it;  
 ase will beareth small Acorns: But the grain or  
 r berry grows out of the woody branches, like  
 pint an excrescence of the substance of the Oake,  
 es an Apple, and of the bigness of Pease, at first  
 dest white, when ripe of an Ash-colour, which in-  
 here renders little Maggots, which when it begins  
 to



*Holey Oke*

*Kermes  
Oke*

to have wings are put into a bag and bowled  
up and down till dead, and then made up in  
lumps, the Maggot as most do deem is Cutch-  
inele; So that Chermet is Cutchinele: the be-  
ries dye scarlet. Mr. George Sands in his  
Travels saith (much to the same purpose) that  
scarlet dye growes like a blister on the leath-  
er of the Holy Oake, a little shrub, yet producing  
Acorns, being gathered they rub out of it  
certain red dust, that converteth after a while  
into worms, which they kill with Wine, where  
they begin to quicken. See farther concerning  
Treacle-berries and Cutchinele in the rarities  
of New-England.

*Pine Tree*

*Canons*

*Virtues*

The Pine-Tree challengeth the first place,  
and that sort which is called Board-pine is the  
principal, it is a stately large Tree, very tall,  
and sometimes two or three fadoms about:  
of the body the English make Canons of 20 foot  
long, and two foot a half over, hollowing of  
them with Adds, and shaping of the outside like  
a Board. Some conceive that the wood called Gopher  
in Scripture, of which Noah made his Ark, was  
no other than Pine, Gen. 6. The bark thereof  
is good for Ulcers in the Throat; The inner  
bark of young board-pine is small and stamp-  
ed and boiled in a Gallon of water is a very  
soveraign medicine for burnings.

or scald, washing the sore with some of the decoction, and then laying on the bark stamp very soft: or for frozen limbs, to take out the fire and to heal them, take the bark of Board-pine-Tree, cut it small and stamp it and boil it in a gallon of water to Gelly, wash the sore with the liquor, stamp the bark again till it be very soft and bind it on. The Turpentine is excellent to heal wounds and cuts, and hath all the properties of Venice Turpentine, the Rosen is as good as Frankincense, and the powder of the dryed leaves generateth flesh; the distilled water of the green Cones taketh away wrinkles in the face being laid on with Cloths.

The Firr-tree is a large Tree too, but seldom so big as the Pine, the bark is smooth, with knobs or blisters, in which lyeth clear liquid Turpentine very good to be put into Salves and oyntments, the leaves or Cones boiled in Beer are good for the Scurvie, the young buds are excellent to put into Epithemes for Warts and Corns, the Rosen is altogether as good as Frankincense; out of this Tree the Poleakers draw Pitch and Tarr; the manner I shall give you, for that it may (with many other things contained in this Treatise) be beneficial to my Countrymen, either there already seated, or that

F may

*Virtues  
of  
the Pine*

*2<sup>d</sup> Feb 22 1622 called*

*Balm of  
Gedead  
Tarr*

*+ the people  
of Poland*

The  
Methods  
to Make  
Tarr  
&  
Pitch

may happen to go thither hereafter. One of Long  
of the fattest wood changed into Torch of these  
wood, which is a disease in that Tree the Root, a  
draw Tarr, first a place must be paved with of heig  
stone or the like, a little higher in the middle diamete  
dle, about which there must be made good Spruce-  
ters, into which the liquor falls, then on side by o  
from them other gutters are to be drawn, and  
by which it may be received, then is it put adv  
into barrels. The place thus prepared, and Ro  
cloven wood must be set upright, then made The E  
it be covered with a great number of Spruce; th  
and pitch bowes; and on every part very sof  
about with much lome and sods of earth and so is  
and great heed must be taken, lest there Turpent  
any cleft or chink remaining, only a hole the Lar  
left in the top of the furnace, through way to  
which the fire may be put in, and the flue good to  
and smok to pass out: when the fire burneth malice  
eth, the Pitch or Tarr runneth forth like of any A  
thin, and then thicker; of which when and stov  
is boiled is made Pitch: the powder leaves.  
dried Pitch is used to generate flesh. The v  
wounds and sores. The knots of this Tarr taken by  
and fat-pine are used by the English in the Eng  
of Candles, and it will burn a long time Rooms,  
but it makes the people pale. long lat

no Spruce  
fir in  
Scotland

but the Northern Highland; abound in pines  
called - Scotch Firs

The Spruce-tree I have given you a white;  
count of in my New-England rarities. Their ho  
the North-east of Scotland upon the banner war



Of *Lough-argick*, there hath been formerly  
 Tons of these Trees 28 handful about at the  
 tree the Root, and their bodies mounted to 90 foot  
 of height, bearing at the length 20 inches  
 in diameter. At *Pascataway* there is now a  
 Spruce-tree brought down to the water-  
 side by our Masts-men of an incredible big-  
 draw nels, and so long that no Skipper durst ever  
 is it yet adventure to ship it, but there it lyes  
 red, and Rots.

The Hemlock-tree is a kind of spruce or  
 of pine; the bark boiled and stamp't till it be  
 part very soft is excellent for to heal wounds,  
 and so is the Turpentine thereof, and the  
 Turpentine that issueth from the Cones of  
 the Larch-tree, (which comes nearest of  
 any to the right Turpentine) is singularly  
 good to heal wounds, and to draw out the  
 fire or malice (or Thorn, as *Helmont* phrases is)  
 forth of any Ach, rubbing the place therewith,  
 when and strowing upon it the powder of Sage-  
 powder leaves.

The white Cedar is a stately Tree, and is  
 taken by some to be *Tamarisk*, this Tree  
 the *English* saw into boards to floor their  
 Rooms, for which purpose it is excellent,  
 long lasting, and wears very smooth and  
 white; likewise they make shingles to cover  
 their houses with instead of tyle, it will ne-  
 ver warp. This Tree, the Oak and the

great  
 mast

Hemlock  
 Spruce

Larch Tree

White Cedar

Larch

*Larch Wood most Durable*  
*grows hard as Iron* (68)

Larch-tree are best for building. Ground made of Larch-tree will never rot, and longer it lyes the harder it growes, that may almost drive a nail into a bar of Iron easily as into that. Oh, that my Countrymen might obtain that blessing with their buildings, which Esay prophesied to Jewes in the 65 Chapter and 22 verse. *Non edificabunt & alius inhabitabit, plantabunt & alius comedet: sed ut dies Arboris, dies erunt populi mei, & manuum suarum deterent electi mei.*

*Sassafras*  
*Tree*  
*its*  
*Vertues*

The Sassafras-tree is no great Tree have met with some as big as my middle the rind is tawny and upon that a thin colour of Ashes, the inner part is white, an excellent smell like Fennel, of a sweet taste with some bitterness; the leaves are like Fig-leaves of a dark green. A decoction of the Roots and bark thereof sweetned with Sugar, and drunk in the morning fasting will open the body and procure stool or two, it is good for the Scurvie taken some time together, and laying upon the legs the green leaves of white Hellebore. They give it to Cows that have newly calved to make them cast their Cleaning. This Tree growes not beyond Black-point Eastward: it is observed, that there is no province but produces Trees and plants growing in other Regions.

*Non omnis fert omnia tellus.*

The Walnut which is divers, some bearing square nuts, others like ours, but smaller: there is likewise black Walnut of precious use for Tables, Cabinets and the like. The Walnut-tree is the toughest wood in the Countrie, and therefore made use of for Hoops and Bowes, there being no Yew there growing; In England they made their Bowes usually of Witch, Hasel, Ash, Yew, the best of outlandish Elm, but the Indians make theirs of Walnut.

*Indian  
Bass  
made of  
Walnut*

The Line-tree with long nuts, the other kind I could never find: the wood of this Tree, Laurel, Rhamnus, Holly and Ivy are accounted for woods that cause fire by attrition; Laurel and Ivy are not growing in New-England: the Indians will rub two sear'd sticks of any sort of wood, and kindle a fire with them presently.

*Evergreens*

The Maple-tree, on the boughs of this Tree I have often found a jellied substance like James-Ears, which I found upon tryal to be as good for sore throats &c.

*Maple Tree  
bears  
James Ears*

The Birch-tree is of two kinds, ordinary Birch, and black Birch, many of these Trees are stript of their bark by the Indians, who make of it their Canows, Kettles,



Uses of  
Birch

to make  
touch wood

Virtues  
of  
Alder

and Birchen-dishes : there is an excrecence growing out of the body of the Tree called spunk, or dead mens Caps, it growes the Roots of Ash, or Beech, or Elm; but the best is that which growes upon the black Birch, this boiled and beaten, and then dried in an Oven maketh excellent Touch wood, and Balls to play with.

Alder, of which wood there is abundance in the wet swamps : the bark thereof with the yoke of an Egg is good for a stricken Indian bruising of his knee, chewing the bark of Alder fasting and laid it on which quickly helped him. The wives of our West-Country English make a drink with the seeds of Alder, giving it to the Children troubled with the *Alloes*. I have talk'd with many of them, but could not apprehend what disease it should be they name, these Trees are called by some *Silvages*.

The *Indians* tell of a Tree that grows far up in the land, that is as big as an Oak that will cure the falling-sickness infallibly what part thereof they use, Bark, Wood, leaves or fruit, I could never learn; they promised often to bring of it to me, but did not. I have seen a stately Tree growing here and there in valleys, not like to our Trees in Europe, having a smooth bark

a dark brown colour, the leaves like great  
Maple, in *England* called Sycamor, but lar-  
ger, it may be this is the Tree they brag of.

Thus much concerning Trees, now I shall  
present to your view the Shrubs; and first of  
the Sumach Shrub, which as I have told you  
in *New-Englands* rarities, differeth from all  
the kinds set down in our *English* Herbals;  
the root dyeth wool or cloth reddish, the  
decoction of the leaves in wine drunk, is  
good for all Fluxes of the belly in man or  
woman, the whites, &c. For galled places  
stamp the leaves with honey, and apply it,  
nothing so soon healeth a wound in the  
head as Sumach stampd and applyed once in  
three dayes, the powder strewed in stayeth  
the bleeding of wounds: The seed of Su-  
mach pounded and mixt with honey, hea-  
leth the Hemorrhoids, the gum put into a  
hollow tooth asswageth the pain, the bark  
or berries in the fall of the leaf, is as good  
as galls to make Ink of.

Elder in *New-England* is shrubbie, & dies  
once in two years: there is a sort of dwarf-  
Elder that growes by the Sea-side that hath  
a red pith, the berries of both are smaller  
than *English*-Elder, not round but corner'd,  
neither of them smell so strong as ours.

Juniper growes for the most part by the  
Sea-side, it bears abundance of skie-colour-

Virtues

4

uses of

Sumach

Elder

Juniper

Juniper on

(72)

Red Cedar

red berries sed upon by Partridges, and hath a woodie root, which induceth

Partridge

seed on them

to believe that the plant mention'd in 30. 4. *Qui decerpabant herbas e salislagia cum sterpibus: etiam radices Juniperorum cibo erant illis*, was our Indian plant Cassia.

Keep fire

Long

Myrica or

Gale with

ferns

They write that Juniper-coals preserve longest of any, keeping fire a whole year without supply, yet the Indian never of. Sweet fern, see the rarities of New land, the tops and nutaments of sweet boiled in water or milk and drunk help all manner of Fluxes, being boiled in water it makes an excellent liquor for Inck.

2 Sorts

current

black, the black currents which are large than the red (smell like cats piss, yet are reasonable pleasant in eating.

prickly

Gooseberry

The Gooseberry-bush, the berry of which is called Grosiers or thorn Grapes, grow over the Countrie, the berry is but small of a red or purple colour when ripe.

There is a small shrub which is very com-

mon, growing sometimes to the height

Elder, bearing a berry like in shape to the

fruit of the white thorn, of a pale yellow

colour at first, then red, when it is ripe

a deep purple, of a delicate Aromatick

fast, somewhat stiptick: to conclude, a

chapp

of *Mespilus* or a *butrum* of each of these there are several species



ways observe this rule in taking or refusing unknown fruit: if you find them eaten of the fowl or beast, you may boldly venture to eat of them, otherwise do not touch them.

Maze, otherwise called Turkie-wheat, or rather Indian-wheat, because it came first from thence; the leaves boiled and drunk helpeth pain in the back; of the stalkes when they are green you may make Beverage, as they do with Calamels, or Sugar-canes. The raw Corn chewed ripens felons or Cats hairs, or you may lay S-mp to it: The Indians before it be thorow ripe eat of it parched. Certainly the parched Corn that Abigail brought to David was of this kind of grain. 1 Sam. 25. 18. The Jewes manner was (as it is delivered to us by a learned Divine) first to parch their Corn, then they fryed it, and lastly they boiled it to a pottage, and then tempered it with water, Cheese-Curds, Honey and Eggs, this they carried drey with them to the Camp, and so was the Cakes of Wine or milk; such was the pulse too of Africa.

French-beans, or rather American-beans, the Herbalists call them kidney beans from their shape and effects, for they strengthen the kidneyes; they are variegated much, some being bigger a great deal than others; some white,

*Indian  
Corn &  
its uses*

*French  
Beans*

great Variety of French (74)

*beans* white, black, red, yellow, blew, spotted  
besides your *Bonivis* and *Calavances* and  
*x virginia* kidney-bean, that is proper to *Ronoka*, but  
these are brought into the Countrey, the  
other are natural to the climate. So the  
*pompeion* of Mexico pompion which is flat and decy  
camphered, the flesh laid to, asswageth  
pain of the eyes. The water-mellon is pro  
per to the Countrey, the flesh of it is of  
flesh colour, a rare cooler of Feavers, and  
*figmarium* excellent against the stone. *Pomum spin*  
*olerum* *palma Christi* sum and *palma-Christi* too growes not here  
unless planted, brought from *Peru*; the  
tree is thought to be the plant, that shadowed  
*Jonah the Prophet*, *Jonas* 4. 6. *Paraverat enim*  
*Jehova Deus ricinum qui ascenderet super*  
*Jonam, ut esset umbra super caput ejus*  
*tura eum à malo ipsius; letabaturque Jonam*  
*ricino illo letitia magna.* *Ricinum*, that is *palma*  
*Christi*, called also *cucurbita*, and therefore  
translated a Gourd.

*Tobacco* Tobacco, or *Tabacca* so called from *Taba*  
*baco* or *Tabaga*, one of the *Caribbe-Islands*  
about 50 English miles from *Trinidad*. The  
right name, according to *Monardus*, is *picotia*  
*te*, as others will *petum*, *nicotian* from *Nicotia*  
*a Portingal*, to whom it was presented  
as a raritie in *Anno Dom. 1559.* by one that  
brought it from *Florida*. Great contentment  
there is about the time when it was first  
brought

brought into England, some will have Sir John Hawkins the first, others Sir Francis Drake's Mariners; others again say that one Mr. Lane employed by Sir Walter Rawleigh brought it first into England; all conclude that Sir Walter Rawleigh brought it first in use. It is observed that no one kind of forraign Commodity yieldeth greater advantage to the publick than Tobacco, it is generally made the complement of our entertainment, and hath made more slaves than Mahomet. There is three sorts of it Marchantable, the first horse Tobacco, having a broad long leaf piked at the end; the second round pointed Tobacco; third sweet scented Tobacco. These are made up into Cane, leaf or ball; there is little of it planted in New-England, neither have they learned the right way of curing of it. It is sown in April upon a bed of rich mould titted, they make a bed about three yards long, or more according to the ground they intend to plant, and a yard and a half over; this they tread down hard, then they sow their seed upon it as thick as may be, and sift fine earth upon it, then tread it down again as hard as possible they can, when it hath gotten four or fix leaves, they remove it into the planting ground; when it begins to bud towards flowering, they crop off the top,

3 Sorts

methode  
of planting



*Pope  
Phytolacca*

*Virtues  
of  
Tobacco*

top, for the Flower draws away the strength of the leaf. For the rest I refer you to the Planter, being not willing to discover the mysteries. The Indians in New England use a small round leaved Tobacco, called by them, or the Fishermen, Poke. It is odorous to the English. The virtues of Tobacco are this, it helps digestion, the Gout, the Tooth-ache, prevents infection by scents, it heats the cold and cools them that sweat, feedeth the hungry, spent spirits restoreth, purgeth the stomach, killeth nits and lice, the juice of the green leaves healeth green wounds although poisoned, Syrup for many diseases, the smoak for the Phibisick, cough of the lungs, distillations, Rheume, and all diseases of a cold and moist cause, good for all bodies cold and moist taken upon an empty stomach, taken upon a full stomach it precipitates digestion, immoderate taken it dryeth the body, enflameth the blood, hurteth the brain, weakens the eyes and the sinews.

*Hellebore*  
*its*  
*Virtues*

White Hellebore is used for the Scurvy by the English. A friend of mine gave them first a purge, then conserve of Bearberries, then fumed their legs with vinegar, sprinkled upon a piece of mill-stone made hot, and applied to the sores white Hellebore leaves; drink made of Orpine and sorrel were given likewise with it, and Scurvy

scurvie-grafs. To kill lice, boil the roots of Hellebore in milk, and anoint the hair of the head therewith or other places.

Mandrake, is a very rare plant, the Indians know it not, it is found in the woods about Pascataway, they do in plain terms flink, therefore Reubens-Flowers that he brought home were not Mandrakes, Gen. 30. 14, 15, 16. They are rendered in the Latine Amabiles flores, the same word say our Divines is used in Canticles; 7. 4. Amabiles istos flores edentes odorem, & secundum ossia nostra omnes pretiosos fructus, recentes simulac veteres, dilecte mi, repono tibi. So that the right translation is, Reuben brought home amiable and sweet smelling Flowers; this in the Canticles (say they) expounding the other.

Calamus Aromaticus, or the sweet smelling reed, it Flowers in July; see New-Englands rarities. *Calamus aromaticus*

Sarsaparilla or roughbind-weed (as some describe it) the leaves and whole bind let with thorns, of this there is store growing upon the banks of Ponds. See the rarities of New-England. The leaves of the Sarsaparilla there described pounded with Hogs greafe and boiled to an unguent, is excellent in the curing of wounds. *Sarsaparilla*

Live for ever, it is a kind of Cud-meed, flou-

Virtues  
 Casus  
 or  
 Vickroyam

flourisheth all summer long till cold weather comes in, it growes now plentifully in our English Gardens, it is good for the lungs, and to cleanse the breast as you do Tobacco; and for pain in the head the decoction, or the juice strained and drunk in Beer, Wine, or Aqua killeth worms. The Fishermen when they want Tobacco take this herb being cut and dried.

Tree  
 primrose  
 Anagris

*Lyfimachus* or Loose-strife: there are several kinds, but the most noted is the yellow *Lyfimachus* of Virginia, the root is longish white, as thick as ones thumb, the stalk of an overworn colour, and a little hairy in the middle vein of the leaf whitish, the Flower yellow and like Primroses, therefore called Tree-primrose, growes on seedie vessels, &c. The first year it growes not up to a stalke, but sends many large leaves handsomely lying upon another, Rose fashion, Flowers in June the seed is ripe in August, this as I have is taken by the English for Scabious.

St. John's wort, it preserveth the Chel made up in it, at Sea.

Spurge or Wolfes milch there are several sorts.

Camphyhal

*Avens*, or herb-bennet; you have an account of it in New-Englands rarities; but one thing



d we thing more I shall add, that you may plain-  
 fully perceive a more masculine quality in the  
 plants growing in *New-England*. A neigh-  
 bour of mine in *Hay-time*, having over-  
 heated himself, and melted his grease, with  
 striving to outmowe another man, fell dan-  
 gerously sick, not being able to turn himself  
 in his bed, his stomach gon, and his heart  
 fainting ever and anon; to whom I admin-  
 istered the decoction of *Avens-Roots* and  
 leaves in water and wine, sweetning it with  
 Syrup of Clove-Gilliflowers, in one weeks  
 time it recovered him, so that he was able  
 to perform his daily work, being a poor  
 planter or husbandman as we call them.  
 Red-Lilly growes all over the Countrey  
 amongst the bushes. Mr. Johnson upon  
 Gerard takes the Tulip to be the Lilly of  
 the field mentioned by our Saviour, Matth.  
 6. 28, 29. *Ac de vestitu quid solliciti estis?*  
*discite quomodo lilia agrorum augeantur:*  
*non fatigantur, neque nent, sed dico vobis, ne*  
*Solomonem quidem cum universa gloria sic*  
*amictum fuisse ut unum ex istis.* Solomon in  
 all his Royalty was not like one of them. His  
 reasons are, first from the shape, like a lilly;  
 The second, because those places where our  
 Saviour was conversant they grow wild in the  
 fields. Third, the infinite variety of the co-  
 lours.

Vestures  
 of  
 Avents

Red Lilly

*lours.* The fourth and last reason, the  
drows beantie and mixture of these Flowers.

*Water-lillie* Water-lillys; the black roots dried and  
pulverized, are wondrous effectual in  
stopping of all manner of fluxes of  
belly, drunk with wine or water.

*Herba-paris*, one berry, herb true  
or four-leaved night-shade, the leaves  
good to be laid upon hot tumours.

*Umbilicus veneris*, or New-England daisy,  
it is good for hot humours, *Erifipelas*,  
*Antonie's fire*, all inflammations.

*Glass-wort*, a little quantity of this plant  
you may take for the Drop sic, but be  
careful that you take not too much, for  
worketh impetuously.

*Water-plantane*, called in New-England  
water Suck-leaves, and Scurvie-leaves, you  
must lay them whole to the leggs to draw  
out water between the skin and the flesh.

*Rosa-solis* *Rosa-solis*, Sun-dew, moor-grass, the  
plant I have seen more of, than ever I  
in my whole life before in England, a man  
may gather upon some marish-grounds an  
incredible quantity in a short time; toward  
the middle of June it is in its season, for  
then its spear is shot out to its length,  
which they take hold and pull the whole  
plant up by the roots from the moss with  
ease.

Amber-greese I take to be a Mushroom, *ambergreese*  
 the rarities of New-England. Monar-  
 chus writeth that Amber-greese riseth out of a  
 certain clammy and bituminous earth under  
 the Sea, and by the Sea-side, the billows casting  
 of it a kind, and fish devour the rest;  
 Some say it is the seed of a Whale, others,  
 that it springeth from fountains as pitch doth,  
 which fishes swallow down; the air congealeth  
 it. And sometimes it is found in the cre-  
 vices and corners of Rocks.  
*Fuss-balls*, *Mullipuffes* called by the Fish-  
 men *Wolves-farts*; are to be found plenti-  
 fully, and those bigger by much than any I  
 have seen in England.

*Coraline* there is infinite store of it cast  
 upon the shore, and another plant that is  
 more spinie, of a Red colour, and as hard as  
 Corral. *Coraline* laid to the gout caseth the  
 pain.

*Sea-Oake* or *wreach*, or *Sea-weed*; the  
 black pouches of *Oar-weed* dried and pul-  
 verized, and drunk with *White-wine*, is  
 a most excellent remedy for the stone: *for the stone*

I will finish this part of my relation con-  
 cerning plants; with an admirable plant  
 for the curing and taking away of *Corns*;  
 which many times sore troubleth the Tra-  
 veller; it is not above a handfull high; the  
 little branches are woodie, the leaves like  
 the



*loose  
Corns*

the leaves of Box, but broader and thicker, hard, and of a deep grass-colour; this bruised or champ't in the mortar and laid upon the Corn will take it all clean in one night. And observe all Trees and plants, their Roots are but small depth, and so they must be set.

Of Beasts of the earth there be 120 several kinds, and not much more. The Fowls of the Air, is the opinion of some Naturalists; there are not many kinds of Beasts in New-England, they be divided into Beasts of the Chase of stinking foot, as Roes, Foxes, Jackals, Wild-cats, Raccoons, Porcupines, Squonks, quashes, Squirrels, Sables, and Martens, and Beasts of the Chase of the sweet foot, as Buck, Red Deer, Rain-Deer, Elke, Maccarib, Bear, Beaver, Otter, Marten, &c.

*Roe Buck*

The Roe a kind of Deer, and the best Beast upon earth is here to be found, and good verison, but not over fat.

The Fox, the male is called a dog-fox, the female a bitch-fox, they go a clicketing beginning of the spring, and bring up their Cubs in May and June. There are two or three kinds of them; one a yellow Fox, another grey, who will climb up into Trees; the black Fox is of another effect. Foxes and Wolves are usually heard day

*more than  
Black Fox*

England from *Holy-Rood* day, till the  
*Annunciation*. In *New-England* they make  
 sport in the depth of winter: they lay  
 sledg-load of Cods-heads on the other side  
 a pale fence when the moon shines, and  
 about nine or ten of the clock the *Foxes*  
 come to it, sometimes two or three, or half  
 dozen, and more; these they shoot, and by  
 that time they have cased them, there will  
 as many; So they continue shooting  
 and killing of *Foxes* as long as the moon  
 shineth: I have known half a score kill'd  
 one night. Their pisles are bonie like a  
 eggs, their fat liquified and put into the  
 caseth the pain, their tails or bushes are  
 very fair ones and of good use, but their  
 ins are so thin (yet thick set with deep  
 ) that they will hardly hold the dres-  
 s. *Jaccals* there be abundance, which is a  
 creature much like a *Fox*, but smaller, they  
 are very frequent in *Palestina*, or the *Holy-*

*Catching  
 Foxes.*

*no  
 Jaccals but  
 Raccoons*

The *Wolf* seeketh his mate and goes a  
 seeking at the same season with *Foxes*, and  
 bring forth their whelps as they do, but  
 their kennels are under thick bushes by  
 great Trees in remote places by the swamps,  
 is to be hunted as the *Fox* from *Holy-*  
 day till the *Annunciation*. But there

*Wolf  
 Lupag 14  
 2:pt*

Rout  
12 Wolves  
Wolves  
Wolverines

Single  
Wolf taken

they have a quicker way to destroy them  
See *New Englands rarities*. They commonly  
go in routs, a rout of *Wolves* is 12 or more  
sometimes by couples. In 1664. we found  
a *Wolf* asleep in a small dry swamp under  
an Oake, a great mastiff which we had  
with us seized upon him, and held him  
we had put a rope about his neck, by which  
we brought him home, and tying of him  
to a stake we bated him with smaller Dogs  
and had excellent sport; but his hinder leg  
being broken, they knockt out his brains.  
Sometime before this we had an excellent  
course after a single *Wolf* upon the heath  
sands by the Sea-side at low water for  
a mile or two, at last we lost our doggs, it  
being (as the *Lancashire* people phrase it)  
twi-light, that is almost dark, and went  
yond them, for a mastiff-bitch had seized  
upon the *Wolf* being gotten into the  
and there held him till one went in and  
him out, the bitch keeping her hold  
they had tyed his leggs, and so carried  
home like a Calf upon a staff between  
men; being brought into the house  
unbound him and set him upon his legs  
he not offering in the least to bite, or  
much as to shew his teeth, but clapping  
stern betwixt his leggs, and leering toward  
the door would willingly have had his life



they served him as they did the  
other, knockt his brains out, for our doggs  
were not then in a condition to bate him;  
their eyes shine by night as a Lanthorn: the  
Fangs of a *Wolf* hung about childrens necks  
keep them from frightening, and are very  
good to rub their gums with when they are  
breeding of Teeth, the gall of a *Wolf* is  
Sovereign for swelling of the sinews; the  
urine or dung of a *Wolf* drunk with white-  
wine helpeth the Collick.

The *Wild-cat*, *Lusfern* or *Luceret*, or Ounce  
is some call it, is not inferiour to Lamb,  
their grease is very soveraign for lameness  
upon taking cold.

2 Sorts *Raccoons*

The *Racoon* or *Rattoon* is of two sorts,  
gray *Rattoons*, and black *Rattoons*, their  
grease is soveraign for wounds with bruises,  
scabs, streins, bruises; and to anoint after  
broken bones and dislocations.

The *Squack* is almost as big as a *Racoon*,  
perfect black and white or pyc-bald, with  
bush-tail like a *Fox*, an offensive Carion;  
the Urine of this Creature is of so strong  
scent, that if it light upon any thing,  
there is no abiding of it, it will make a  
strong smell, though he were of *Alexanders*  
complexion; and so sharp that if he do but  
whisk his bush which he pisseth upon in the  
face of a dogg hunting of him, and that

G 3 any

*Eyes shine*

*Ounce*  
*Lynx*  
*Lusfern*  
*Wild Cat*  
*for food*

*Squack*  
*urine*  
*stinks*

any of it light in his eyes it will make him almost mad with the smart thereof.

*Musquashies*  
*Small Beaver*

The *Musquashies* is a small Beast that live in shallow ponds, where they build their houses of earth and sticks in shape like mole hills, and feed upon *Calamus Aromaticus*: May they scent very strong of Muske: their furr is of no great esteem; their stone wrapt up in Cotten-wool will continue long time, and are good to lay among cloths to give them a grateful smell.

*3 Sorts Squirrels*

The *Squirrel*, of which there are three sorts, the mouse-squirrel, the gray squirrel and the flying squirrel, called by the *Indians* *Assapanick*. The mouse-squirrel is hardly as big as a Rat, streak'd on both sides with black and red streaks, they are mischievous vermine destroying abundance of Corn both in the field and in the house, where they will gnaw holes into Chests, and tear clothes both linnen and wollen, and are remarkable nut-gatherers in *August*; when hazel and filbert nuts are ripe you may see upon every Nut-tree as many mouse-squirrels as leaves; So that the nuts are gone in a trice which they convey to their Drays or Nests. The gray squirrel is pretty large, almost as big as a Conie, and are very good meat in some parts of the Countrey there are many of them. The flying squirrel is so called, because

cause ( his skin being loose and large ) he spreads it on both sides like wings when he passeth from one Tree to another at great distance. I cannot call it flying nor leaping, for it is both. *marmot*

The *Matrise* is a Creature whose head and fore-parts is shaped somewhat like a Lyons, not altogether so big as a house-cat, they are innumerable up in the Countrey, and are esteemed good furr. *Matrise*  
*monac*

The *Sable* is much of the size of a *Matrise* perfect black, but what store there is of them I cannot tell, I never saw but two of them in Eight years space. *Sable*

The *Martin* is as ours are in England, but blacker, they breed in holes which they make in the earth like Conies, and are innumerable, their skins or furr are in much request. *Martin*

The *Buck*, *Stag*, and *Rain-Deer* are Creatures that will live in the coldest climates, here they are innumerable, bringing forth three *Fawns* or *Calves* at a time, which they hide a mile asunder to prevent their destruction by the *Wolves*, wild-Cats, Bears, and *Mequans* : when they are in season they will be very fat ; there are but few slain by the *English*. The *Indians* who shoot them, and take of them with toyls, bring them in *Buck*  
*stag*  
*Rain-Deer*



*French  
Caribou*

*is the  
Green Deer*

*Bucks*

*Does have*

*Horns*

*on a*

*field*

*Deers*

*Horns*

*from*

*Greenland*

*Moose or*

*Elk*

*pag. 14.*

*2 ft*

*on a field*

*found*

*Horns from tip to tip - 12 feet*

with their suet, and the bones that grow upon Stags-Hearts.

What would you say, if I should tell you that in Green-land there are Does that have as large horns as Bucks, their brow Angle growing downwards beyond their Mustles, and broad at the end wherewith they scrape away the snow to the grass, it being impossible for them otherways to live in those cold Countries; the head of one of these Does was sometime since nailed upon a sign post in Charter-house-lane, and these following verses written upon a board underneath it.

Like a Bucks-head I stand in open view,  
And yet am none; nay, wonder not, 'tis true,  
The living Beast that these fair horns did own  
Well known to many, was a Green-land Doe  
The proverb old is here fulfill'd in me,  
That every like, is not the same you see.

The Moose or Elke is a Creature, or rather if you will a Monster of superfluities; full grown Moose is many times bigger than an English Oxe, their horns as I have said elsewhere, very big (and brancht out into palms) the tips whercof are sometime found to be two fathom asunder, (a fathom

Great Old

Moose Deer

12 foot high

is six feet from the tip of one finger to the tip of the other, that is four cubits,) and in height from the ~~foot~~ <sup>heel</sup> of the fore-foot, to the pitch of the shoulder twelve foot, both which hath been taken by some of my sceptique Readers to be monstrous lyes. If you consider the breadth that the beak carrieth, and the magnitude of the horns, you will be easily induced to contribute your belief. And for their height since I came into England I have read Dr. Scroderus his Chymical dispensatory translated into English by Dr. Rowland, where he writes that when he lived in Finland under Gustavus Horna he saw an Elke that was killed and presented to Gustavus his Mother, seventeen spans high. Lo you now Sirs, of the Gibing crue, if you have any skill in mensuration, tell me what difference there is between Seventeen spans and twelve foot. There are certain transcendentia in every Creature, which are the indelible Characters of God, and which discover God; (There's a prudential for you) as John Rhades the Fisherman used to say to his mate, Kitt Lux. But to go on with the Moose; they are accounted a kind of Deer, and have three Calves at a time, which they hide a mile asunder too, as other Deer do, their skins make excellent Coats for Martial men, their sinews which are as big

the Finland

Elke

17 spans high

3 Fawns

at a Birth

great  
Moose Deer

big as a mans finger are of perdurable toughness and much used by the Indians the bone that growes upon their heart is an excellent Cordial, their blood is as thick as an Asses or Bulls who have the thickest blood of all others, a man the thinnest. What age they live I know not, certainly a long time in their proper climate. Some particular living Creatures cannot live in every particular place or region, especially with the same joy and felicity as it did where it was first bred, for the certain agreement of nature that is between the place and the thing bred that place: As appeareth by Elephants which being translated and brought out of the Second or Third Climate, though they may live, yet will they never ingender or bring forth young. So for plants, Birds, &c. Of these Creatures, some few there have been brought into England, but did not long continue. Sir R. Baker in his Chronicle tells us of an Elephant in Henry the Thirds Reigne, which he saith was the first that was ever seen there, which as it seems is an error unless he restrain it to the Norman's time. For Mr. Speed writeth that Claudius Drusus Emperour of Rome brought in the first into his Army; the bones of which digged up since are taken for Gyants bones. As for the Moose the first that was seen in England sleeping

+  
anno 1250

Elephant  
by the  
Romans



was in King Charles the First Raige; thus much for these magnals amongst the Creatures of God to be wondered at, the next beast to be mentioned is

The *Maurouse*, which is somewhat like a *Moose*, but his horns are but small, and himself about the size of a *Stag*, these are the *Deer* that the flat-footed *Wolves* hunt in every after.

The *Maccarib* is a Creature not found that ever I heard yet, but upon *Cape-Sable* near to the *French* plantations.

The *Bear* when he goes to mate is a terrible Creature, they bring forth their *Cubs* in *March*, hunted with *doggs* they take a *Tree* where they shoot them, when he is fat he is excellent *Venison*, which is in *Acorn* time, and in winter, but then there is none dares to attempt to kill him, but the

*Indian*. He makes his *Denn* amongst thick *Bushes*, thrusting in here and there store of

*Moss*, which being covered with snow and that melting in the day time with heat of the *Sun*, in the night is frozen into a thick coat of *Ice*; the mouth of his *Den* is very narrow, here they lye single, never two in a *Den* all winter. The *Indian* as soon as he finds them, creeps in upon all four, seizes As with his left hand upon the neck of the sleeping *Bear*, drags him to the mouth of the

+1625  
to  
1648

*Maurouse*  
a *Deer*-like  
our *Rod-Deer*

let on from the *French*  
*Maccarib*

*Bear* see  
p: 19: 2: p<sup>t</sup>

*Bears*  
*Denn*

*Indian*  
seizes a  
*Bear*  
a *Sheep*

the Den, where with a club or small hatchet in his right hand he knocks out his brains before he can open his eyes to see his enemy. But sometimes they are too quick for the Indians, as one amongst them call'd a black Robin lighting upon a male-Bear had a piece of his buttock torn off before he could fetch his blow : their grease is very sovereign. One Mr. Purchase cured himself of the *Sciatica* with Bears-grease, keeping some of it continually in his groin. It is good too for swell'd Cheeks upon cold, Rupture of the hands in winter, for limbeck taken suddenly with *Sciatica*, Gout, or other diseases that cannot stand upright nor go, bed-rid ; it must be well chaf't in, and the same cloth laid on still ; it prevents the shedding of the hair occasioned by the coldness of winters weather ; and the yard of a Bear which as a Doggs or Foxes is boned is good for to expell Gravel out of the kidneys and bladder, as I was there told by one Mr. Abraham Philater a Jersey-man.

The Beaver or Pound-dog is an Ambitious Creature, lives upon the land as well as in the water. I suppose they feed upon fish, but am sure that the Bark of Trees is also their food ; there is an old proverb saying, *sic me jubes quotidie, ut fiber salicem* you love me as the Beaver doth the willow.

Vestures  
Bears fat

Beaver

who  
They  
not  
Massa  
down  
call. T  
stones  
and  
them  
finew  
um tw  
and w  
make  
perfu  
with  
her n  
fit. T  
Nerv  
plexi  
ther T  
line v  
Roots  
T  
too,  
and b  
doth  
mer  
Shro  
Engl  
skin  
whi

who cateth the Bark and killeth the Tree.  
 They will be tame, witness the *Beaver* that  
 not long since was kept at *Boston* in the  
*Massachusetts-Bay*, and would run up and  
 down the streets, returning home without a  
 call. Their skins are highly valued, and their  
 stones are good for the palsie, trembling,  
 and numbness of the hands, boiling of  
 them in Oyl of *Spike*, and anointing the  
 sinews in the neck. If you take of *Castori-*  
*um* two drams, of womans hair one dram,  
 and with a little Rozen of the *Pine-Tree*,  
 make it up into pills as big as Filberts and  
 perfume a woman in a fit of the mother  
 with one at a time laid upon coals under  
 her nostrils, it will recover her out of her  
 fit. The grease of a *Beaver* is good for the  
 Nerves, Convulsions, Epilepsies, Apo-  
 plexies &c. The tail as I have said in ano-  
 ther Treatise, is very fat and of a mascu-  
 line vertue, as good as *Eringo's* or *Satyri-*  
*Roots*.

*Beaver*  
*Same at*  
*Boston*

+ fits

Vertues

*Otter*

The *Otter* or *River-Dog* is Amphibious  
 too, he hunteth for his kind in the spring,  
 and bringeth forth his whelps as the *Beaver*  
 doth, they are generally black, and very nu-  
 merous, they are hunted in *England* from  
*Shrovetide* untill *Midsummer*, but in *New-*  
*England* they take them when they can. The  
 skin of an *Otter* is worth Ten Shillings,  
 and



and the Gloves made thereof are the best fortification for the hands against wet weather that can be thought of, the furr is excellent for muffs, and is almost as dear as Beaver, the grease of an Otter will make fish turn up their bellies, and is of rare use for many things.

Hare

The Hare, I have no more to write of them than that they kindle in hollow Trees. What else concerns him, or any of the fore-mentioned Creatures you have in New-Englands rarities, to which I refer you.

porcupine

The Porcupine likewise I have treated of, only this I forgot to acquaint you with that they ~~are~~ are good meat.

Indian

Dog

between

Wolf

Fox

The last kind of Beasts are they that are begot by equivocal generation, as Mules and several others, that when the Beasts were brought by the Almighty Creator to Adam, who gave them names, were not then *rerum natura*. Of these there are not many known in New-England. I know but of one, and that is the Indian dog begotten betwixt a Wolf and a Fox, or between a Fox and a Wolf, which they made use of, taming of them, and bringing of them up to hunt with, but since the English came amongst them they have gotten store of our dogs, which they bring up and keep in as much subjection as they do their webbs.

old name for Wife

Of Birds there are not many more than 120 kinds as our Naturalists have conjectured, but I think they are deceived; they are divided into land-birds and water-birds, the land-birds again into birds of prey, birds for meat, singing-birds and others.

The *Pilbannaw* is the King of Birds of prey in *New-England*, some take him to be a kind of *Eagle*, others for the *Indian-Ruck* the biggest Bird that is, except the *Ostrich*. One Mr. *Hilton* living at *Pascataway*, had the hap to kill one of them: being by the Sea-side he perceived a great shadow over his head, the Sun shining out clear, casting up his eyes he saw a monstrous Bird soaring aloft in the air, and of a sudden all the *Ducks* and *Geese*, (there being then a great many) dived under water, nothing of them appearing but their heads. Mr. *Hilton* having made readie his piece, shot and brought her down to the ground, how he disposed of her I know not, but had he taken her alive & sent her over into *England*, neither *Bartholomew* nor *Sturbridge-Fair* could have produced such another sight.

*Hawkes* there are of several kinds, as *Goshawkes*, *Falcons*, *Laniers*, *Sparrow-hawkes*, and a little black *hawke* highly prized by the *Indians* who wear them on their heads,

120 species  
birds

Eagle

Pilbannaw  
Ked

Hawkes

*Little  
Black Nighthawk*

heads, and is accounted of worth sufficient to ransom a *Sagamour*: they are so strangely courageous and hardie, that nothing flies in the Air that they will not bind with. I have seen them tower so high, that they have been so small that scarcely could they be taken by the eye. *Hawkes* grease is good for sore eyes.

*Osprey*

The *Osprey* I have treated of. There is a small Ash-colour Bird that is shaped like a *Hawke* with talons and beak that fall upon *Crowes*, mounting up into the Air to ter them, and will beat them till they cry.

*Vulture*

The *Vulture* or *Geire*, which is spoken in *Levit. II. 14.* and called a *Gripe*, their bones are good to line doublets with, and bones of their head hung about the neck helpeth the head-ach.

*Turkey  
Buzzard*

The *Gripe*, see *New Englands rarities* for the *Turkie-buzzard*.

*Owl  
3  
sorts*

The *Owl* the most flagging Bird that of which there are three sorts, a great *Owl* with ears, a little grey *Owl*, and a white *Owl*, which is no bigger than a *Thrush*. *Plinie* writes that the brains of an *Owl* swageth the pain & inflammation in the of the ear. And that Eggs of an *Owl* put into the liquor that a *toad* useth when drunk with, will make him loath drunk.



ness ever after. But now peradventure some  
 will say, what doth this man mean to bring  
*Owls to Athens?* verily Sirs I presume to say,  
 had I brought over of the little white *Owls*  
 they would have been acceptable, they are  
 good mousers, and pretty Birds to look  
 upon: the *Athenians*, no question are bet-  
 ter employed than to take notice of my  
*Owls*, poor ragged Birds they are and want  
 those glittering golden feathers that *Drai-*  
*on's Owl* is adorned with, yet they are  
 somewhat of that nature; if an *Athenian*  
 chance in this season of divertisement to  
 cast an eye upon them I shall be glad, but  
 more glad if he vouchsafe to prune and  
 correct their feathers, which I confess are  
 discomposed for want of Art; plain Birds  
 they are, and fit for none but plain men to  
 manage. Sirs do not mistake me, there's  
 no man living honours an *Athenian* more  
 than I do, especially where I perceive great  
 abilities concommiting with goodness of na-  
 ture: A good nature (saith Mr. *Perkins*)  
 the Character of God, and God is the  
 Father of learning, knowledge, and every  
 good gift, and hath condescended to be-  
 come a School-master to us poor mortals,  
 furnishing of us with Philosophy, Historie,  
 Divinity by his holy Scriptures, which if  
 we diligently learn and practise, we shall in

*Little  
 White Owl*

*aluding  
 to his stile*

time be brought into his Heavenly Academy, where we shall have fulness and perfection of knowledge eternally. But there are a Generation of men and women in this prophane age that despise Gods learning and his Ushers to the *Athenians*, choosing to wallow in the pleasures of sin for a season. I shall conclude this excursion, with that which a Poet writ sometime since, and then return to the trimming of my Owl.

*Say thou pour'st them Wheat,  
And they would Acorns eat ;  
'Twere simple fury in thee then to waste  
Thy self, on them that have no taste;  
No, give them drass their fill,  
Husks, Grains and swill ;  
They that love Lees and leave the lustie Wine  
Envy them not, their palats with the Swine.*

*Birds of  
prey. the  
Female  
beggish*

The Raven is here numerous and Crows but Rooks, Danes, Popinjaes, Megpies there be none. It is observed that the female of all Birds of prey and Ravin is ever bigger than the male, more venturous, hardy, and watchful : but such Birds as do not live by prey and Ravin, the male is much larger than the female. So much for Birds of prey, the next are Birds for the distillation and the first of these is,

The *Turkie*, which is in *New-England*. *Turkie*  
 every large Bird, they breed twice or thrice  
 in a year, if you would preserve the young  
 Chickens alive, you must give them no wa- *Give young*  
 ter, for if they come to have their fill of *no Water*  
 water they will drop away strangely, and  
 you will never be able to rear any of them:  
 they are excellent meat, especially a *Turkie*-  
 Capon beyond that, for which Eight shil-  
 lings was given, their Eggs are very whole-  
 some and restore decayed nature exceeding- *Turkey's*  
 ly. But the *French* say they breed the Le-  
 profie; the *Indeffes* make Coats of *Turkie*-  
 feathers woven for their Children.

The *Partridge* is larger than ours, white *Species*  
 Bellit, but very dry, they are indeed a sort *moor*  
 of *Partridges* called *Groosers*. found to the Northward *Game*

The *Pidgeon*, of which there are millions  
 of millions, I have seen a flight of *Pidgeons* *Pidgeon*  
 in the spring, and at *Michaelmas* when they  
 return back to the Southward for four or *Millions*

five miles, that to my thinking had neither  
 beginning nor ending, length nor breadth, *they*  
 and so thick that I could see no Sun, they *obscure*  
 join Nest to Nest, and Tree to Tree by *the Sun*  
 their Nests many miles together in Pine-  
 Trees. But of late they are much dimi-  
 nished, the *English* taking them with Nets.  
 I have bought at *Boston* a dozen of *Pidgeons*  
 ready pull'd and garbidg for three pence



Ring-Doves they say are there too, but I could never see any.

The Snow-Bird is like a Chaf-Finch go in flocks and are good meat.

*Singing  
Birds*

The singing Birds are Thrushes with red breasts, which will be very fat and are good meat, so are the Threessels, Filladies are small singing Birds, Ninemurders little yellow Birds. New-England Nightingales painted with orient colours, black, white, blue, yellow, green and scarlet, and sing sweetly. Wood-larks, Wrens, Swallows, who will sit upon Trees, and Starlings black as Ravens with scarlet pinions; other sorts of Birds there are, as the Troculus, Wag-tail, or Dippers, water, which is here of a brown colour. Titmouse two or three sorts, the Dunneck, + hedge-Sparrow who is stark naked in winter nett. The golden or yellow hammer a Bird about the bigness of a Thrush that is all over as red as bloud, Wood-Peckers two or three sorts, gloriously set out with variety of glittering colours. The Colaptes Viemalin, or rising or waking Bird, an Emblem of the Resurrection, and the wonder of little Birds.

*Humming  
Birds*

The water-fowl are these that follow. Hookers or wild-Swans, Cranes, Geese three sorts, grey, white, and the brant Geese the first and last are best meat, the white

lean and tough and live a long time; whereupon the proverb, Older than a white Goose; of the skins of the necks of grey Geese with their Bills the Indians makes Mantles and Coverlets sowing them together and they shew prettily. There be four sorts of Ducks, a black Duck, a brown Duck like our wild Ducks, a grey Duck, and a great black and white Duck, these frequent Rivers and Ponds; but of Ducks there be many more sorts, as Hounds, old Wives, Murres, Doves, Shell-drakes, Shoulers or Shoflers, Widgeons, Simps, Teal, Blew wing'd, and green wing'd, Divers or Didapers, or Dipchicks, Fenduck, Duckers or Moorhens, Coots, Pochards, a water-fowl like a Duck, Plungeours, a kind of water-fowl with a long reddish Bill, Puets, Plovers, Smethes, Wilmotes, a kind of Teal, Godwits, Humilities, Knotes, Red-Shankes, Wobblers, Loones, Gulls, white Gulls, or Sea-Cobbs, Candemandies, Herons, grey Bitterns, Ox-eyes, Birds called Oxen and Keen, Petterels, Kings fishers, which breed in the spring in holes in the Sea-banks, being unapt to propagate in Summer, by reason of the driness of their bodies, which becomes more moist when their pores are closed by cold. Most of these Fowls and Birds are eatable. There are little Birds that frequent the Sea-shore in flocks called Sanderlins,

Birds

Dove long

Coverlets

Ducks

A lot

Water

Fowl

they are about the bigness of a Sparrow which  
 and in the fall of the leaf will be all fall who are  
 when I was first in the Countrey the English The  
 cut them into small pieces to put into the notice of  
 Puddings instead of suet, I have know of wat  
 twelve score and above kill'd at two the 177 kir  
 I have not done yet, we must not forget there is  
 al 2 hooks Cormorant, Shape or Sharke; though I can not his  
 not commend them to our curious palate is not in  
 the Indians will eat them when they the Ear  
 fley'd, they take them prettily, they roost out man  
 the night upon some Rock that lyes out Port, w  
 the Sea, thither the Indian goes in his Bird Affm'd  
 Canow when the Moon shines clear, The Sea  
 when he is come almost to it, he lets  
 Indian Canow drive on of it self, when he is com  
 Way under the Rock he shoves his Boat along  
 he come just under the Cormorants water  
 To catch man, the rest being asleep, and so sound You Divi  
 do sleep that they will snore like so man The deep  
 Cormorant Piggs; the Indian thrusts up his hand of Took you  
 sudden, grasping the watchman so that Out of the  
 round about his neck that he cannot Which po  
 out; as soon as he hath him in his Canow Of cragg  
 he wrings off his head, and making him Bring for  
 Canow fast, he clambreth to the top Pages, pic  
 the Rock, where walking softly he take Out, said  
 them up as he pleaseth, still wringing of Plumes,  
 their heads; when he hath slain as man  
 as his Canow can carry, he gives a throu  
 which



*Sparrow* which awakens the surviving *Cormorants*,  
all *fowls* who are gone in an instant.

*Engl.* The next Creatures that you are to take  
to the notice of, are they that live in the Element  
known of water. *Pliny* reckons them to be of  
two *sorts* kinds, but certainly if it be true that  
there is no Beast upon Earth, which hath  
not his like in the Sea, and which (perhaps)  
is not in some part parallel'd in the plants of  
the Earth; we may by a diligent search find  
out many more: of the same opinion is the  
out *Port*, who saith that it is

*As* Affirm'd by some that what on Earth we find,  
The Sea can parallell in shape and kind.

Divine *Dubertus* goes further.

On Divine wits of elder dayes, from whom  
The deep invention of rare works hath com',  
Take you not pattern of our chiefest Toolles  
Out of the lap of Thetis, Lakes, and Pools?  
Which partly in the Waves, part on the edges  
Of craggy Rocks, among their ragged sedges,  
Bring forth abundance of Pins, Spincers, spokes,  
Nails, piercers, needles, mallets, pipes & yoaks,  
Oars, sails & swords, saws, wedges, razors,  
rammers,  
Planes, cornets, knives, wheels, vices, horns  
and hammers.

Psalm 104. 25, 26. In ipso mari magis  
 & spatioſo, illic reptilia ſunt atque innum  
 animantia parva cum magnis. Illic na  
 ambulant; balena quam formasti ludo  
 in eo.

*there are very few if any instances that  
 can ſupport this ſuppoſition*  
 And as the females amongſt Beaſts  
 the males, ſo do they eſpecially among  
 fiſhes; and thoſe I intend to treat of, I ſhall  
 divide into ſalt-water fiſh, and freſh-water  
 fiſh.

### Whale

*fool  
 55 long*

The Sea that *Piscina mirabilis* affords  
 us the greateſt number, of which I ſhall  
 begin firſt with the Whale a regal fiſh,  
 all fiſhes of extraordinary ſize are accom  
 ed, of theſe there are (as I have ſaid in an  
 other place) ſeven kinds, the Ambergreed  
 Whale the chief. Anno Dom. 1668  
 17 of July there was one of them thro  
 up on the ſhore between Winter-harbour and  
 Cape-perpus, about eight mile from the place  
 where I lived, that was five and fifty feet  
 long. They are Creatures of a vaſt ma  
 gnitude and ſtrength. The Royal Psalmiſt  
 in the 148 psalm, and the 7 verſe, makes  
 mention of them. Laudate Jehovahm terreſtre  
 Cete (Dracones as ſome tranſlate it) & mor  
 nes abyſſi. And Moſes in his hiſtory of Job  
 Job 41. 1. An extrahis balenam hamo, &c.

*Why it is called the ambergreed Whale. Where  
 I don't know for there is no quantity of it  
 coming from a Whale*

Whereby the subtilty of the Devil is shewed,  
 as also, the greatness and brutishness of the  
 Devil by the Elephant, in the 10 verse of the  
 foregoing Chapter. In the book of Jonas pro-  
 phets we read of a great fish, Jonah 1. 17.  
*Parat autem Jehova piscem magnum, qui ob-*  
*forberet Jonam.* But whether this were a  
 Whale or not is questioned by some. In the  
 head (saith Mr. Parkinson the Herbalist)  
 of one only sort of Whale-fish is found that  
 which is called *Sperma Cæti*, it lyes in a hole a good  
 therein, as it were a Well, taken out and prest *Sumption*  
 that the oyl may come out, the substance is that  
 we use for *Sperma Cæti*, and hath little or no  
 smell, the oyl smells strong. See the rarities of  
 New-England.

The Sea-hare is as big as *Grampus* or  
 Herrin-hog, and as white as a sheet; There  
 hath been of them in Black-point-Harbour,  
 & some way up the river, but we could never  
 take any of them, several have shot slugs  
 at them, but lost their labour.

The Sturgeon is a Regal fish too, I have  
 seen of them that have been sixteen foot in  
 length: of their sounds they make *Isinglass*, - made  
 which melted in the mouth is excellent to  
 seal letters.

Sharks there are infinite store, who tear  
 the Fishermens nets to their great loss and  
 hinderance; they are of two sorts, one flat  
 headed,



headed, the other long snouted, 'the pretious  
stone in their heads ( sovereign for the  
stone in a man ) so much coveted by the  
travelling Chirurgeon is nought else but  
the brains of the flat-headed *Sbarke*. With  
these we may joyn the Dog-fish or Thon  
hound, who hath two long sharp prickles  
on his back, *Sea-dog*

*Sting  
Ray?*

*the  
Morse*

The *Sea-horse* or *Morse* is a kind  
monster-fish numerous about the *Ile  
Sables*, i. e. The sandy Ile. An Amphibious  
Creature kill'd for their Teeth and O  
never brings forth more than two at  
birth ; as also doth the *Soil* and *Manate*  
*Cow-fish*, which is supposed to 'be the *Sea*  
monster spoken of by *Jeremy, Lament. 4.*  
*Etiā phoca præbent mammam, lactant calu*  
*suos ; So the Latins render it, phoca a Sea*  
*Calf or Soil.*

*manatu*

The small *Sword-fish* is very good meat  
the *Sea-bat* or *Sea-owl* a kind of flying fish  
Negroes or *Sea-Devils* a very ugly fish  
having a black scale, there are three sorts  
amongst them, one a hideous fish, another about  
two foot long ; of these I have seen store  
*Black-point Harbour* in the water, but never  
attempted to take any of them.

*Sea-  
Devils*

*Squids*

*Squids* a soft fish somewhat like a cudge  
their horns like a *Snails*, which sometimes  
are found to be of an incredible length

this fish is much used for bait to catch a  
Cod, Hacke, Pollack, and the like Sea-fish.

The *Dolphin*, *Boquito*, or *Dozada*, the ashes  
of their teeth mixed with honey, is good  
to alluage the pain of breeding teeth in  
Children.

The *Sea-bream*, *Dorado*, or *Amber-fish*,  
they follow ships as doth the *Dolphin*, and  
are good meat.

The *Mackarel*, of which there is choice-  
full plenty all summer long, in the spring  
they are ordinarily 18 inches long, after-  
wards there is none taken but what are  
smaller.

The *Liver-fish* like a *Whiting*.

The *Herrin* which are numerous, they  
take of them all summer long. In Anno  
Dom. 1670. they were driven into Black-  
point Harbour by other great fish that prey  
upon them so near the shore, that they  
drew themselves (it being high water)  
upon dry land in such infinite numbers that  
we might have gone up half way the leg  
amongst them for near a quarter of a mile.  
We used to qualifie a pickled *Herrin* by  
boiling of him in milk.

The *Alewise* is like a *Herrin*, but has a  
bigger bellie therefore called an *Alewise*,  
they come in the end of *April* into fresh  
Ri-

*Great  
Shoals of  
Herring*

10.000 old  
Wives taken  
in 2 hours

196 —  
taken 2

3000 —  
taken at a  
Set

Rivers and Ponds; there hath been taken in  
two hours time by two men without a  
Weyre at all, saving a few stones to stop the  
passage of the River, above ten thousand. The  
Italian hath a proverb, that he that  
hath seen one miracle will easily believe ano-  
ther; but this relation far from a miracle, one  
cle will peranter meet, instead of a belief, com-  
with an Adulterate construction from those  
that are somewhat akin to St. Peters mock-  
ers, such as deny the last judgement. I have  
known in England 9 score and 6 Pike  
Pikes and Pickarel taken with three Angles  
between the hours of three and ten in the  
morning, in the River Ouse in the Isle of  
Ely, three quarters of a yard long above  
half of them; they make red Alewives  
after the same manner as they do herrings: the  
and are as good.

The Basse is a salt water fish too, but  
most an end taken in Rivers where they  
spawn, there hath been 3000 Basse taken  
at a set, one writes that the fat in the bone  
of a Basse head is his braines which is a lie, and then

The Salmon likewise is a Sea-fish, but  
the Basse comes into Rivers to spawn; a Salmon  
the first year is a Salmon-smelt; the second  
year a Molt; the third a Sprit; the fourth  
a Star; the fifth a Sirkel; the sixth a thin re-



...a *forke tail*; and the seventh year a *Salmon*.  
 There are another sort of *Salmon* frequent  
 out those parts called *white Salmon*.

*Capeling* is a small fish like a smelt.

The *Turtle* or *Tortoise* is of two sorts

he *Sea-Turtles* and *land-Turtles*: of *Sea-Turtles*

lieve there are five sorts, of *land-Turtles* three

a *land-Turtle*, one of which is a right *land-turtle* that

a *land-Turtle* or never goes into the water, the o-

in the two being the *River-Turtle*, and the

mod *land-Turtle*: there are many of these in the

ment. *Brooke Chyson* in the *Holy land*. The ashes

and of a *Sea-Turtle* mixt with oyl or *Bears-*

Ang *grease* causeth hair to grow: the shell of a

a in a *land-Turtle* burnt and the ashes dissolved in

e *Wine* and oyl to an unguent healeth chaps

g about fores of the feet: the fish burnt and the

leaves mixt with wine and oyl healeth fore

ber *eggs*: the ashes of the burnt shell and the

whites of eggs compounded together hea-

oo, b *chaps* in womens nipples; and the

ere the *head* pulverized with it prevents the falling

aken of the hair, and will heal the *Hemorrhoids*,

one out washing of them with white-wine,

lye, and then strewing on the powder.

but a *Lobster*, which some say is at first a *whelk*,

a *Sea* have seen a *Lobster* that weighed twenty

; *Pound*, they cast their shell-coats in the

; *Spring*, and so do *Crabs*; having underneath

: fix a thin red skin which growes thicker and

hard

*Turtles*

*As*

*Virtues*

*Lobster*

20<sup>th</sup>

Oysters  
g. Indian long

hard in short time. The *Indians* feed much upon this fish, some they roast, and some they dry as they do *Lampres* and *Oysters* which are delicate breakfast meat so ordered. The *Oysters* are long shell'd, I have had them nine inches long from the point to the toe, containing an *Oyster* like those the *Latines* called *Tridacnan* that were cut into three pieces before they could swallow them into their mouths, very fat and sweet.

The *Muscle* is of two sorts, *Sea-muscle* in which they find *Pearl* and *river-muscle*. *Sea-muscles* dried and pulverized and laid upon the sores of the *Piles* and *hemorrhoids* with oyl will perfectly cure them.

Spinus  
Sea Eggs

The *Whore* is a shell-fish, the shells called *whores-eggs*, being fine round white shells, in shape like a *Mexico* pompon, but bigger than a good large *Hens-egg*; they are wrought down the sides with little knobs and holes very prettily, but are thin and brittle.

Solen

The *Perrinig* is a shell-fish that lyeth upon the *Sands* flat and round as a shovel-board piece and very little thicker; these at a little hole in the middle of the shell thrust out a cap of hair, but upon the least motion of any danger it drawes it in again.

*Trou* there be good store in every brook, ordinarily two and twenty inches long

long, their greafe is good for the *Piles* and  
*diffis*.

The *Eal* is of two sorts, salt-water *Eals*  
 and fresh-water *Eals*; these again are distin-  
 guished into yellow bellied *Eals* and silver  
 bellied *Eals*; I never eat better *Eals* in no  
 part of the world that I have been in, than  
 are here. They that have no mind or leasure  
 to take them, may buy of an *Indian* half a  
 dozen silver bellied *Eals* as big as those we  
 usually give 8 pence or 12 pence a piece for  
 at *London*, for three pence or a groat. There  
 is severall wayes of cooking them, some  
 have them roasted, others baked, and many  
 will have them fryed; but they please my  
 palate best when they are boiled, a com-  
 mon way it is to boil them in half water,  
 half wine with the bottom of a manchet,  
 a bagot of Parsley, and a little winter fava-  
 ry, when they are boiled they take them out  
 and break the bread in the broth, and put  
 in three or four spoonfuls of yest, and a  
 piece of sweet butter, this they pour to  
 their *Eals* laid upon sippets and so serve it  
 I fancie my way better which is this,  
 when the *Eals* are fley'd and washt I fill their  
 bellies with Nutmeg grated and Cloves a  
 little bruised, and sew them up with a needle  
 and thred, then I stick a Clove here and  
 there in their sides about an inch asunder,  
 making

how  
 to dress  
 Eals



making holes for them with a bodkin, then small ne  
done I wind them up in a wreath and pards of  
them into a kettle with half water and ha it they  
white wine-vinegar, so much as will r pot dom  
four fingers above the *Eals*; in midst of the let you  
*Eals* I put the bottom of a penny white, few and  
loaf, and a fagot of these herbs following, in New-  
Parsley one handful, a little sweet Marjoram, your pa  
Peniroyal and Savory, a branch of Rolygon to e  
mary, bind them up with a thred, and when come th  
they are boiled enough take out the *Ea*  
and pull out the threds that their bellies Alepore  
were sowed up with, turn out the Nutmeg, Alliscore  
and Cloves, put the *Eals* in a dish with Arracha  
butter and vinegar upon a chafing-dish with Arracon  
coals to keep warm, then put into the bro New-fish  
three or four spoonfuls of good Ale-yeast all-beas  
with the juice of half a Lemmon; but your fish  
fore you put in your yeast beat it in a porri Can-fish  
ger with some of the broth, then break the dry-fish  
crust of bread very small and mingle it with Ale  
together with the broth, pour it into a den Clum  
dish and garnish it with the other half of the Cod  
the Lemmon, and so serve them up to the Cod  
Table in two dishes.

The *Frost fish* is little bigger than a Grounds of  
geon and are taken in fresh brooks; when the fish  
waters are frozen they make a hole in the Ice  
Ice about half a yard or yard wide, to which  
the fish repair in great numbers, where with  
the

To Dress Eals

small nets bound to a hoop about the big-  
 ends of a farkin-hoop with a staff fastned to  
 they lade them out of the hole. I have  
 done with the fish yet, being willing to  
 know all of them that are to be  
 found and catch'd in the Sea and fresh waters  
 in New-England, and because I will not tire  
 your patience overmuch, having no occasi-  
 on to enlarge my discourse, I shall only  
 name them and so conclude.

*Names of Fish*

Alpore	Cunner	Maid
Albicore	Sea-Darts	Monk-fish
Barracha	or Javelins	Sea-mullet
Barracouta	Flail-fish	Nun-fish
Bass-fish	Flounder	Perch
Beard-head	or Flawke	Polluck
Bear-fish	Flying-fish	Periwinkle
Cat-fish	several kinds	Pike
Cow-fish	Sea-Flea	Pilch-fish
Cod	Grandpisse	Plaice
Cod	Hake	Porpisse
Cod	Haddock	Prawne
Cod	Horse-foot	Purple-fish
Cod	Hallibut	Porgie
Cod	Hen-fish	Remora
Cod	Lampre	Sea-Raven
Cod	Limpin	Sail-fish
Cod	Lumpe	Scallop
	I	Seate-

Scate	Smelt	Turbet	vering
Stringray	Shrimps	The Ulaife	bar om
Sculpin	Sprates	or Saw-fish	The
Shadd	Star-fish	Sea-Urchin	numbe
Spurlin	Sword-fish	Sea-Unicle	others
Shearb-fish	Thornback		Some a
			red al

The fish are swum by, and the Serpents are creeping on, terrible creatures, carrying stings in their tails. It will smart worse than a Satyr's whip, though it were as big as the Shepherds the mad Gentleman at Milton. Mowbrayes Constantinus Lasculus.

*Rattle  
Snake*

The chief or Captain of these is the Rattle-snake described already in my Journal, in some places of the Countrey though, there are none as at Plymouth, New-town, Nahantkins and some other places, they will live on the side of the River, and but swimming and coming into the woods dye immediately.

*Virtues.*

The fat of a Rattle-snake is very sovereign for frozen limbs, bruises, lameness, falls, Aches, Sprains. The heart of a Rattle-snake dried and pulverized and drunk with wine or beer is an approved remedy against the biting and venom of a Rattle-snake. Some body will give me thanks for this, the



vering these secrets and the rest; *Non omnia  
sunt omnia conveniunt.*

The Snake of which there are infinite numbers of various colours, some black, others painted with red, yellow and white, some again of a grass-green colour powdered all over as it were with silver dust or Muscovie-glass. But there is one sort that exceeds all the rest, and that is the Checkered snake, having as many colours withing the checkquers shadding one another, as there are in a Rainbow. There are two sorts of snakes, the land-snake and the water-snake; the water-snake will be as big about the belly as the Calf of a mans leg; I never heard of any mischief that snakes do, they kill them sometimes for their skins and bones to make hatbands of, their skins likewise worn as a Garter is an excellent remedie against the cramp. I have heard of the skins that they cast in woods in some quantity, they cast not their very skins, but only the superfluous thin skin that is upon the very skin, for the very skin a Rat is baited to the flesh, so Lobsters and Crabs. The Earth-worm, these are very rarely seen as small as a horse hair, but there is a little that lyes in the earth and eateth the for disced, that is somewhat like a Maggot of a very white colour with a red head, and is about

*Colour  
Snakes*

*Water Snake*

*Cast their  
Skins*

*Insects*

the bigness of ones finger and an inch or an inch and half long. There is also a dunnish Worm or Bug of the bigness of Oaten-straw, and an inch long, that in the spring lye at the Root of Corn and Garden plants all day, and in the night creep out and devour them; these in some years destroy abundance of *Indian* Corn and Garden plants, and they have but one way to be rid of them, which the *English* have learned of the *Indians*; And because it is somewhat strange, I shall tell you how it is, they go out into a field or garden with a Birch dish, and spudling the earth about the roots for they lye not deep, they gather their dish full which may contain about a quart or three pints, then they carrie the dish to the Sea-side when it is ebbing-water and set it swimming, the water carrieth the dish into the Sea and within a day or two if you go into your field you may look your eyes sooner than find any of them.

*Indian Story**Ridiculous Credulity**Cockroach*

*Sow-bugs* or *Millipedes* there be good store, but none of that sort that are round and turn round as a pea when they are touched; neither are there any *Beetles* like *Maple-bugs*, but a stinking black and little *Bug* called a *Cacarooch* or *Cockroach*, and a little black *Bug* like a *Lady-cow* that breed in skins and furs and will eat them to the

a datter spoil. Likewise there be infinite num-  
 bers of *Tikes* hanging upon the bushes in  
 summer time that will cleave to a mans  
 Garments and creep into his Breeches eating  
 themselves in a short time into the very flesh  
 of a man. I have seen the stockings of those  
 that have gone through the woods cove-  
 red with them. Besides these there is a  
 leane but whether it be a Native to the  
 Countrie or a stranger I cannot say: Some  
 are of opinion that they are brought in by  
 the Merchant with Spanish goods, they in-  
 crease our beds most, all day they hide them-  
 selves, but when night comes they will  
 creep to the sleeping wretch and bite him  
 worse than a flea, which raiseth a swelling  
 that will itch intolerably, if you  
 scratch it waxeth bigger and growes to a  
 sore; and if you chance to break one of  
 these *Bugs* it will stink odiously: they call  
 them *Chinches* or *Wood-lice*, they are fat, red  
 in shape like a *Tike* and no bigger.  
 There are also Palmer-worms which is a  
 kind of Catterpillar, these some years will  
 devour the leaves of Trees leaving them as  
 bare almost as in winter, they do much  
 harm in the English Orchards. Of *Snails*  
 there are but few, and those very little ones;  
 they lye at the Roots of long grass in moist  
 places, and are no where else to be found.

*Tikes*

*Common  
Bugs*

*Caterpillars  
Devour  
Trees*



Spiders and Spinners there be many, the last very big and of several colours.

ant

The Pismire or Ant must not be forgotten, accounted the least Creature, and Salomon commended for its wisdom, Prov 30. 24. 25. *Quatuor ista parva sunt humilibus, tamen sunt sapientia, apprime sapientia: formica populus infirmus, quae comparant astutiam cibum suum, &c.* There are two sorts, red

2 sorts of

Ants and black Ants, both of them are many times found winged; not long time they were poured upon the Sands out of the clouds in a storm between Black-poll and Saco, where the passenger might have walked up to the Ankles in them.

Kind  
ants

The Grasshopper is innumerable and bigger by much than ours in England, having Tinsel-wings, with help whereof they will fly and skip a great way. Next to these number are your Crickets, a man can walk no where in the summer but he shall tread upon them; The Italian who hath the Crickets cryed up and down the streets (*Grille di camelo*) and buyeth them to put into the Gardens, if he were in New-England would gladly be rid of them, they make such a din in an Evening. I could never discover the Organ of their voice, they have a little clift in their Crown which opens, and at the same instant they show their wings.

Crickets

Cicadas

The Est or Swift in New-England is a most beautiful Creature to look upon, being larger than ours, and painted with glorious colours; but I lik'd him never the better for it.

Frogs too there are in ponds and upon dry land, they chirp like Birds in the Spring, and latter end of summer croak like Toads. It is admirable to consider the generating of these Creatures, first they lay their gelly on the water in ponds and still waters, which comes in time to be full of black spots as broad as the head of a Ten-penny nail, and round, these separate themselves from the gleir, and alter a while thrust out a tail, then their head comes forth, after their head springs out their fore-legs, and then their hinder-legs, then their tail drops off, and growes to have a head and four legs too, the first proves a frog, the latter a water nuer. The Herbalist useth to say by way of admiration, *quelibet herba deum &c.* So God is seen in the production of these small Creatures which are a part of the Creation; *Laudate Jehovah cœlites, Laudate eum in excelsis, &c. Laudent nomen Jehovah qua ipso præcipiente illico creata sunt &c. ipsa bestia & omnes jumenta, reptilia & aves alate, Psal. 148.*

The Toad is of two sorts, one that is

off or  
land for and

Frogs

+ mistake

Toads

speckled with white, and another of a dark earthy colour; there is of them that will climb up into Trees and sit croaking there; but whether it be of a third sort, one of the other, or both, I am not able to affirm; but this I can testify that there are Toads of the dark coloured kind that are as big as a groat loaf. Which report will not swell into the belief of my sceptique Sirs; nor that there is a Hell; being like Salomon's fool, Prov. 26. 22. *Sed si contumderes stultum in mortario cum mola pistillum non recederet ab eo stultitia ejus.*

Bull +  
HogsRats  
broughtMouse a  
Native

Bats

A  
Tame  
thought  
instead

The

Now before I proceed any further, must (to prevent misconstructions) tell you that these following Creatures, though they be not properly accounted Serpents, yet they are venomous and pestilent Creatures. As, first the Rat, but he hath been brought in since the English came thither, but the Mouse is a Native, of which there are several kinds not material to be described; the Bat or flitter mouse is bigger abundance than any in England and Iworn, which brings me to the insects or cut-wasps. Creatures again, as first the honey Bee, which are carried over by the English and thrive there exceedingly, in time they may be produced from Bullocks when the wild Beasts are destroyed. But the wasp is common,

Honey Bee carried over by the English  
if an old notion & not from Virgil



mon, and they have a sort of wild humble-  
Bee that breed in little holes in the earth.  
Near upon twenty years since there lived an  
old planter at *Black-point*, who on a *Sunshine*  
day about one of the clock lying upon a  
grass bank not far from his house, charged  
his Son, a lad of 12 years of age to a-  
wake him when he had slept two hours,  
the old man falls asleep and lying upon his  
back gaped with his mouth wide enough  
for a Hawke to shit into it; after a little  
while the lad sitting by spied a humble-  
Bee creeping out of his Fathers mouth,  
which taking wing flew quite out of sight,  
the hour as the lad ghest being come to  
waken his Father he jogg'd him and cal-  
pented aloud Father, Father, it is two a clock,  
Creation all would not rouse him, at last he sees  
the humble-Bee returning, who lighted up-  
on the sleepers lip and walked down as the  
Bee conceived into his belly, and presently  
he waked.

The Countrey is strangely incommoda-  
ted with flyes, which the *English* call  
*sketaes*, they are like our gnats, they  
bite so fiercely in summer as to make  
the faces of the *English* swell'd and scab-  
by as if the small pox for the first year.  
beside there is a small black fly no bigger  
than a flea, so numerous up in the Countrey,  
that

Wasps

 1620  
 1674 54 yrs  
 1724

 Oo  
 Story

Mosquitoes

*Small fly  
a  
Plague*

*Insects*

*flying  
Glow-worms*

*green-flies*

that a man cannot draw his breath, but will suck of them in: they continue about Thirty dayes say some, but I have known them laste three moneths, and are not only a pestement but a plague to the Countrey. There is another sort of fly called a Gurnipp that are like our horse-flies, and will bite desperately, making the blood to spurt out in great quantity; these trouble our English Cattle very much, raising swellings as big as an egg in their hides. The Butcher is of several sorts and larger than our So are their Dragon-flies. Glow-worms have here wings, there are multitudes of them insomuch that in the dark evening when I first went into the Countrey before I thought the whole Heavens had been on fire, seeing so many sparkles flying in the air: about Mount-Carmel, and the valley of Acree in the Holy-land there be abundance of them.

These are taken for *Cantharides*. *Cantharides* are green flies by day, in the night they pass about like a flying Glow-worm with fire in their tails.

I have finished now my relation of plants, &c. I have taken some pains in collecting of them to memory, and set them down for their benefit from which I may expect thanks; but I believe my

ward will be according to Ben Johnsons *proverbs*  
 overbs, Whistle to a Jade and he will pay  
 you with a fart, Claw a churl by the britch,  
 and he will shit in your fist.

The people that inhabited this Countrey  
 are judged to be of the *Tartars* called *Sa-*  
*monids* that border upon *Moscovia*, and are  
 divided into Tribes; those to the East and  
 North-east are called *Churchers* and *Taren-*  
*ines*, and *Monhegans*. To the South are the  
*Pequots* and *Narragansets*. Westward *Con-*  
*necticutis* and *Mowbacks*. To the Northward  
*Mergerians* which consist of *Massachusets*,  
*Wippanaps* and *Tarrentines*. The *Pocanakes*  
 live to the Westward of *Plimouth*. Not long  
 before the English came into the Countrey,  
 happened a great mortality amongst them,  
 especially where the English afterwards  
 planted, the East and Northern parts were  
 smitten with the Contagion; first by  
 the plague, afterwards when the English  
 came by the small pox, the three Kingdoms  
 of *Sagamorships* of the *Massachusets* were  
 very populous, having under them seven  
 Dukedoms or petti-*Sagamorships*, but by  
 the plague were brought from 30000 to  
 300. There are not many now to the East-  
 ward, the *Pequots* were destroyed by the  
 English: the *Mowbacks* are about five hun-  
 dred: Their speech a dialect of the *Tar-*

*Indians*  
*population*  
*to Samoides*

*Indian Nations*

*Plague*  
*amongst*  
*the Indians*

*from*  
*30:000*  
*to*  
*300*

*no affinity to the Tartar Dialect*



ars, (as also is the *Turkish* tongue ) There is a difference between Tongues and Languages, the division of speech at *Babel* is most properly called Languages, the rest Tongues.

*Indians*

As for their persons they are tall and handsome timber'd people, out-wristed pale and lean *Tartarian* visag'd, black eyed which is accounted the strongest sight, and generally black hair'd, but smooth and curl'd wearing of it long. No

no-

beards, or very rarely, their Teeth are very white, short and even, they account them the most necessary and best parts of man. And as the *Austrians* are known by their great lips, the *Bavarians* by their pokes under their chins, the *Jews* by their goggle eyes, so the *Indians* by their flat noses, are they not so much deprest as they are to the Southward.

*Character*

*Indian*

*Women*

*pretty*

The *Indesses* that are young, are some of them very comely, having good features, their faces plump and round, and generally plump of their Bodies, as are the men like the *Spaniards*, and as soft and smooth as a mole-skin of reasonable good complexions, but they dye themselves tawny, many prettily with *Brownetto's* and spider finger'd L ftes may be seen amongst them. The *Vetula's* or old women are lean and ugly, all of them are of a modest demeanor, considering their

Savage breeding; and indeed do shame  
our English rusticks whose rudeness in many  
things exceedeth theirs.

Of disposition very inconstant, crafty,  
timorous, quick of apprehension, and very  
ingenious, soon angry, and so malicious  
that they seldom forget an injury, and bar-  
barously cruel, witnesses their direful reven-  
ges upon one another. Prone to injurious  
violence and slaughter, by reason of their  
blood dried up with overmuch fire, very  
vehement proceeding from choller adust  
and melancholy, a salt and sharp humour;  
very figurative or theevish, and bold im-  
portunate beggars, both Men and Women  
guilty of Misoxenie or hatred to strangers,  
a quality appropriated to the old Brittaines,  
all of them Cannibals, eaters of humane  
flesh. And so were formerly the Heathen-  
ish, who used to feed upon the Buttocks  
of Boyes and Womens Paps; it seems it is  
natural to Savage people so to do. I have  
read in Relations of the Indians amongst  
the Spaniards that they would not eat a  
Spaniard till they had kept him two or three  
dayes to wax tender, because their flesh was  
hard. At Martins vinyard, an Island that  
lies South to Plimouth in the way to Virgi-  
nia, certain Indians ( whilst I was in the  
Country ) seised upon a Boat that put in  
to

*Indians Disposition*

*all do not eat  
of Humane  
Flesh*

*Fresh*

*Spaniards  
eat Hard*

*Indians  
Eat the Men*

to a By-Cove, kill'd the men and eat them up in a short time before they were discovered.

*Wigwams*

Their houses which they call *Wigwams* are built with Poles pitch'd into the ground of a round form for most part, sometimes square, they bind down the tops of the poles, leaving a hole for smoke to go out, the rest they cover with the bark of Trees and line the inside of their *Wigwams* with mats made of Rushes painted with several colours, one good post they set up in the middle that reaches to the hole in the top with a staff a cross before it at a convenient height, they knock in a pin on which they hang their Kettle, beneath that they set a broad stone for a back which keepeth the post from burning; round by the walls they spread their mats and skins where the men sleep whilst their women dress their victuals they have commonly two doors, one opening to the South, the other to the North and according as the wind fits, they close up one door with bark and hang a Deer skin or the like before the other. Towards the North they have none, being always removing from one place to another for convenience of food, sometimes to those places where one sort of fish is most plentiful, otherwhiles where others are. I have seen half



hundred of their *Wigwams* together in a piece of ground and they shew prettily; within a day or two, or a week they have been all dispersed. They live for the most part by the Sea-side, especially in the spring and summer quarters, in winter they are gone up into the Countrie to hunt *Deer* and *Beaver*, the younger *Twebbs* going with them. Tame Cattle they have none, excepting Lice, and Doggs of a wild breed that they bring up to hunt with.

Wives they have two or three, according to the ability of their bodies and strength of their concupiscence, who have the easiest labours of any women in the world; they will go out when their time is come alone, carrying a board with them two foot long, and a foot and half broad, bor'd full of holes on each side, having a foot beneath like a Jack that we pull Boots off with, on the top of the board a broad strap of leather which they put over their fore-head, the board hanging at their back; when they are come to a Bush or a Tree that they fancy they lay them down and are delivered in a trice, not so much as groaning for it, they wrap the child up in a young *Beaver*-skin with his heels close to his britch, leaving a little hole if it be a Boy for his Cock to peep out at; and lace him down to the board

+  
younger  
women

2 or 3 times

Women in  
(Child-bed)

managoment

(128) feet

of the Indian  
Children

Remlock-  
Bark

Apparel

+ Deer-

Iron shoes

board upon his back, his knees resting upon  
the foot beneath, then putting the strap and the  
leather upon their fore-head with the inflexible  
hanging at their back home they trudge their  
What other ceremonies they use more they  
dying of them with a liquor of boiled Her  
lock-Bark, and their throwing of them in the  
the water if they suspect the Child to be  
gotten by any other Nation, to see if he  
will swim, if he swim they acknowledge  
him for their own, their names they give  
them when they are men grown, and continu  
much to be called after our English manner, exc  
Robin, Harry, Phillip and the like, very  
dulent they are to their Children, sending  
their children sometimes to their Parents  
but if they live so long that they become  
a burden to them, they will either starve  
them or bury them alive, as it was supposed  
an Indian did his Mother at Casco in 1669  
Their Apparel before the English came, Ra  
amongst them, was the skins of wild Beasts  
with the hair on, Buskins of Deerskins  
or Moose drest and drawn with lines in  
several works, the lines being coloured white  
yellow, blew or red, Pumps too they have  
made of tough skins without soles. In  
winter when the snow will bear them, they bea  
fasten to their feet their snow shoes which  
are made like a large Racket we play with  
Ten

ing upon their backs with, lacing them with Deers-guts  
 strap and the like, under their belly they wear a  
 square piece of leather and the like upon  
 their posteriors, both fastened to a string  
 are they about them to hide their secrets; on  
 their heads they wear nothing: But since  
 they have had to do with the English they  
 have purchased of them a sort of Cloth called  
 Moccasins of which they make Mantles,  
 Coats with short sleeves, and caps for their  
 heads which the women use, but the men  
 continue their old fashion going bare-headed  
 excepting some old men amongst them  
 They are very proud as appeareth by their  
 painting themselves out with white and blew  
 beads of their own making, and painting  
 their faces with the above mentioned  
 colours, they weave sometimes curious Coats  
 with Turkie feathers for their Children.  
 Their Diet is Fish and Fowl, Bear, Wild-  
 Raccoon and Deer; dry'd Oysters,  
 and Beavers roasted or dried in the smoak,  
 and dry'd Moose-tongues, which  
 they esteem a dish for a Sagamor; hard eggs  
 red whiled and made small and dried to thicken  
 their broth with, salt they have not the use  
 of, nor bread, their Indian Corn and Kid-  
 neys they boil, and sometimes eat their  
 parcht or roasted in the ear against the  
 fire; they feed likewise upon earth-nuts

Indian  
Steps

beads of  
New orna  
making

Food

Turkies

no bread

no salt

Indian corn

apios &c

K

or



Indian

(130)

Food

apetites x

or ground-nuts, roots of water-Lillies  
Chef-nuts, and divers sorts of Beans  
They beat their Corn to powder and put  
up into bags, which they make use of when  
stormie weather or the like will not suffer  
them to look out for their food. Pommes  
and water-Mellons too they have good  
they have prodigious stomachs, devouring  
a cruel deal, meer voragoes, never giving  
over eating as long as they have it, between  
meals spending their time in sleep till the  
next kettlefull is boiled, when all is gone  
they satisfie themselves with a small quantity  
of the meal, making it serve as the small  
gal bit amongst the old Britains, who  
taken to the maintenance of a Bean water  
satisfie both thirst and hunger. If they have  
none of this, as sometimes it falleth out  
(being a very careless people not providing  
against the storms of want and temperance  
necessity) they make use of Sir Francis  
Drake's remedy for hunger, go to sleep.

Long

They live long, even to an hundred years  
of age, if they be not cut off by their children,  
war, and the plague, which together with  
the small pox hath taken away abundance  
of them. Piny reckens up but six thousand  
Diseases in and about man, latter writers  
Six thousand, 236 belonging to the eyes.  
There are not so many Diseases raised

(131)

*the Spaniards & French  
caught the Pox from  
the Florida Indians*

ing amongst them as our Europeans. The  
great pox is proper to them, by reason (as  
some do deem) that they are Man-eaters,  
which Disease was brought amongst our  
Europeans first by the Spaniards that went  
with Christopher Columbus who brought it  
to Naples with their Indian-women, with  
whom the Italians and French conversed  
Anno Dom. 1493. Paracelsus saith it hap-  
ped in the year 1478 and 1480. But all a-  
gree that it was not known in Europe be-  
fore Columbus his voyage to America. It  
hath continued amongst us above two hun-  
dred and three score years. There are Dis-  
eases that are proper to certain climates, as  
the Leprosie to Ægypt, swelling of the  
Throat or Mentegra to Asia, the sweating  
Sickness to the Inhabitants of the North; to  
the Portugals the Phthisick, to Savoy the  
Rumps; So to the West-Indies the Pox,  
and this doth not exclude other Diseases.  
In New-England the Indians are afflicted  
with pestilent Feavers, Plague, Black-pox,  
Consumption of the Lungs, Falling-sick-  
ness, Kings-evil, and a Disease called by  
the Spaniard the Plague in the back, with  
the Empyema, their Physicians are the Pow-  
er or Indian Priests who cure sometimes  
by charms and medicine, but in a general  
infection they seldom come amongst them,  
Columbus sent out there-

*Great Pox  
from  
America*

*in year*

*1478*

*1480*

*1674*

*260*

*1414*

*Diseases*

*in August: 1492*

Remedies

Sweatonly

Proves

Burial

Waxshell

therefore they use their own remedies which is sweating, &c. Their manner when they have plague or small pox among them to cover their *Wigwams* with Bark close that no Air can enter in; lining the (as I said before) within, and making a great fire they remain there with a sweat heat till they are in a top sweat, and then run out into the Sea or River, and presently after they are come into their Huts again they either recover or give up the Ghost; they dye patiently both men and women, not knowing of a Hell to punish them, nor a Conscience to terrifie them. In times of general Mortality they omit the Ceremonies of burying, exposing the dead Carcases to the Beasts of prey. But on other times they dig a Pit and set the dead therein upon his breech upright, and cover it with sods and bind them down with sticks driving in two stakes at each end; their mournings are somewhat like the howling of the *Irish*, seldom at the grave but in the *Wigwam* where the party dyed, blame the Devil for his hard heartedness, and conclude with rude prayers to him to assist them no further.

They acknowledge a God who they call *Squantam*, but worship him they do not.



because (they say) he will do them no harm. But *Abbamoch* or *Cheepie* many times finites them with incurable Diseases, scares them with his Apparitions and pinning the Terroures, by reason whereof they live in a wretched consternation worshipping the Devil for fear. One black *Robin* and an *Indian* sitting down in the Corn field before long to the house where I resided, ran out of his *Wigwam* frighted with the apparition of two infernal spirits in the shape of *Mohawkes*. Another time two *Indians* and an *Indef*, came running into our house crying out they should all dye, *Cheepie* was gone over the field gliding in the Air with a long rope hanging from one of his Buttogs: we askt them what he was like, they said all wone *Englishman*, clothed with hat, coat, shooes and stockings, &c. They have a remarkable observation of a flame = appears in the sky that appears before the death of an *Indian*; that *English* upon their *Wigwams* in the dead of the night: The first time that I did see it in the night, I was call'd out by some of them about twelve of the clock, it being a very dark night, I perceived it plainly mounting into the Air over our Church, which was built upon a plain little more than half a quarter of a mile from our dwelling house, on the Northside of the Church: look on

*Spirits*

*flame = appears before Death*

what side of a house it appears, from the Coast respectively you shall hear of Coarse within two or three days.

They worship the Devil (as I said). *Canjurers* Priests are called *Pomams* and are little better than Witches, for they have familiar conference with him, who makes them invulnerable, that is shot-free and stick-free. Craftie Rogues, abusing the rest at their pleasure, having power over them by reason of their Diabolical Art in curing of Diseases, which is performed with rude Ceremonies; they place the sick upon the ground sitting, and dance in an Antick manner round about him, beating their naked breasts with a strong hand, and making devout faces, sometimes calling upon the Devil for his help, mingling their prayers with horrid and barbarous charms; if the sick recover, they send rich gifts, their Bowes and Arrowes, *Wompompers*, *Mohacks*, *Beaver skins*, or other rich Furs to the Elderward, where there is a vast Rock not far from the shore, having a hole in it of an unsearchable profundity, into which they throw them.

Their Theologic is not much, but questionless they acknowledge a God and Devil, and some small light they have of the Souls immortality; for ask them what

When they go when they dye, they will tell  
 you pointing with their finger to Heaven  
 beyond the white mountains, and do hint  
 at Noah's Flood, as may be conceived by  
 a story they have received from Father to  
 Son time out of mind, that a great while  
 ago their Countrey was drowned, and all  
 the People and other Creatures in it, only  
 the *Powaw* and his *Webb* foreseeing the  
 Flood fled to the white mountains carrying  
 a Hare along with them and so escaped;  
 after a while the *Powaw* sent the *Hare* away,  
 who not returning emboldned thereby  
 they descended, and lived many years after,  
 and had many Children, from whom the  
 Countrey was filled again with *Indians*.  
 Some of them tell another story of the  
*Beaver*, saying that he was their Father.

Their learning is very little or none, no  
 Poets they are as may be guessed by their  
 formal speeches, sometimes an hour long,  
 the last word of a line riming with the last  
 word of the following line, and the whole  
 doth *Constare ex pedibus*. Musical too they be,  
 having many pretty odd barbarous tunes  
 which they make use of vocally at marria-  
 ges and feastings; but Instruments they  
 had none before the *English* came amongst  
 them, since they have imitated them and  
 will make out Kitts and string them as neat-

*Fiddles* K 4 ly,  
*Violins*

*Notion of  
a Flood*

*this Wife*

*no  
Musical  
Instruments*



Ingenious

+ main

recon by

their fingers

good guides

in winter

children

ly, and as Artificially as the best Fiddler amongst us; and will play our lessons very exactly: the only Fidler that was in the Province of *Meyn*, when he was there, was an *Indian* called *Secoz*, whom the Fishermen and planters who they had a mind to be merry made use of. In Arithmetick they skill not, reckoning ten upon their fingers, and if more doubling of it by holding their fingers up, though they reckon by Moons, and their actions by sleeps, as, if they go a journey, are to do any other business they will sleep three sleeps me walk, or two or three sleeps me do such a thing, that is in two or three days. Astronomie too they have no knowledge of, seldom or never taking observation of the Stars, Eclipses, or Comets that I could perceive; but they will prognosticate shrewdly what weather will follow. They are generally excellent *Zenagogs* or guides through their Country.

Their exercises are hunting and fishing in both they will take abundance of pains. When the snow will bear them, the young and lustie *Indians*, (leaving their papoules and old people at home) go forth to hunt Moose, Deere, Bear and Beaver, Thirty or forty miles up into the Countrey; when they light upon a Moose they run him down which

which is sometimes in half a day, some-  
 times a whole day, but never give him over  
 till they have tyred him, the snow being  
 usually four foot deep, and the Beast very  
 hevie he sinks every step, and as he runs  
 sometimes bears down Arms of Trees that  
 hang in his way, with his horns, as big  
 as a mans thigh; other whiles, if any of  
 their dogs (which are but small) come  
 near, yerking out his heels (for he strikes  
 like a horse) if a small Tree be in the way  
 he breaks it quite asunder with one stroak,  
 at last they get up to him on each side and  
 transpierce him with their Lances, which  
 formerly were no other but a staff of a  
 yard and half pointed with a Fishes bone  
 made sharp at the end, but since they put  
 on pieces of sword-blades which they pur-  
 chase of the French, and having a strap of  
 leather fastned to the but end of the staff  
 which they bring down to the midst of it,  
 they dart it into his sides, *hæret latere lethali*  
*in arum do*, the poor Creature groans, and  
 walks on heavily, for a space, then sinks and  
 falls down like a ruined building, making  
 the Earth to quake; then presently in  
 come the Victors, who having cut the throat  
 of the slain take off his skin, their young  
 cubs by this time are walking towards  
 them with hevie bags and kettles at their  
 backs,

*Huatoing*  
*Moose Deer*

*Kill the*  
*Moose*

Women's  
Work

Cookery

backs, who laying down their burdens to work upon the Carkass, take out the heart, and from that the bone, cut off the left foot behind, draw out the sinews, and cut out his tongue &c. and as much of the Venison as will serve to satiate the hungry mawes of the Company : mean while the men pitch upon a place near the spring, and with their snow shoos shovel snow away to the bare Earth in a circle making round about a wall of snow; in the midst they make their *Vulcan* or fire near a great Tree, upon the snags whereof they hang their kents fill'd with the Venison whilst that boils, the men after they have refresh't themselves with a pipe of Tobacco dispose themselves to sleep. The women attend the Cookerie, some of them scrape the slime and fat from the skin, cleanse the sinews, and stretch them and the like, when the venison is boiled the men awake, and opening of their bags take out as much *Indian* meal as will serve their turns for the present; they eat their broth with spoons and their flesh they divide into gobbets, eating now and then with it as much meal as they can hold betwixt three fingers, then to drink they fetch from the spring, and were not acquainted with other, untill the French and English traded with that curst liquor called



called *Rum*, *Rum-bullion*, or *kill-Devil*,  
 which is stronger than spirit of Wine, and  
 drawn from the dross of Sugar and Su-  
 gar Canes, this they love dearly, and will  
 part with all they have to their bare skins  
 for it, being perpetually drunk with it, as  
 long as it is to be had, it hath killed many  
 of them, especially old women who have  
 died when dead drunk. Thus instead of  
 bringing of them to the knowledge of  
 Christianitie, we have taught them to com-  
 mit the beastly and crying sins of our Na-  
 tion, for a little profit. When the *Indians*  
 have stuffed their paunches, if it be fair wea-  
 ther and about midday they venture forth  
 to gain, but if it be foul and far spent, they  
 betake themselves to their field-bed at the  
 foot of the Star, expecting the opening of  
 the Eastern window, which if it promise  
 serenity, they truss up their fardles, and a-  
 way for another *Moose*, this course they con-  
 tinue for six weeks or two moneths, making  
 for their *Webbs* their *Mules* to carry their lug-  
 gage, they do not trouble themselves with  
 the horns of *Moose* or other *Deer*, unless it be  
 near an *English* plantation; because they are  
 weighty & cumbersome. If the *English* could  
 procure them to bring them in, they would  
 be worth the pains and charge, being sold in  
*England* after the rate of forty or fifty  
 pounds

*Indians*

*Women*  
*Moose*

*Horns Id*

pounds a Tun; the red heads of Deer are the fairest and fullest of marrow, and lightest; the black heads are heavy and have the least marrow; the white are the worst, and are worst nourished. When the Indians are gone there gathers to the Carkas of the Mackinac thousands of *Mattises*, of which there are but few or none near the Sea-coasts to be seen, these devour the remainder in a quarter of the time that they were hunting for it.

*monac  
Mattises**Methods  
of taking  
of Lobsters  
by the  
Indians*

Their fishing followes in the Spring, Summer and fall of the leaf. First for Lobsters, Clams, Flouke, Lumps or Podles, and after wives; afterwards for Bass, Cod, Rock, Bladder fish, Salmon, and Lampres, &c.

The Lobsters they take in large Bay when it is low water, the wind still, going out in their *Birchen-Canows* with a two or three yards long, made small and sharpen'd at one end, and nick'd with deep nicks to take hold. When they spy the Lobster crawling upon the Sand in two fathom water, more or less, they stick him toward the head and bring him up. I have known thirty Lobsters taken by an Indian lad in an hour and a half, thus they take Flouke and Lumps; Clams they dig out of the Clam banks upon the flats and in creeks when the water is low, where they are bedded some

*Clams large species of Rocks*

Deer times a yard deep one upon another, the  
 and light beds a quarter of a mile in length, and less, *Lake*  
 have the *Alemives* they take with Nets like a *Loose*  
 and a purlenet put upon a round hoop'd stick  
 are gone with a handle in fresh ponds where they  
 ne *M* come to spawn. The *Bass* and *Blew-fish* they  
 there take in harbours, and at the mouth of  
 is to bur'd Rivers being in their *Canows*, striking  
 a qu them with a fisgig, a kind of dart or staff,  
 nting to the lower end whereof they fasten a  
 ing, (sur of Iron ) with a string fastened to it, as soon  
*Lobster* as the fish is struck they pull away the staff,  
 and *A* leaving the bony head in the fishes body and  
 k, *Ble* fasten the other end of the string to the  
*Canow*: Thus they will hale after them to  
 ge *Bay* fore half a dozen or half a score great  
 , gon fishes: this way they take *Sturgeon*; and in  
 a si dark evenings when they are upon the fish-  
 all and ground near a Bar of Sand ( where the  
 th de *Sturgeon* feeds upon small fishes ( like *Eals* )  
 the *L* that are called *Lances* sucking them out of  
 fatho the Sands where they lye hid, with their  
 toward hollow Trunks, for other mouth they have  
 e know none) the *Indian* lights a piece of dry Birch-  
 d in a *Bark* which breaks out into a flame & holds  
 uke an over the side of his *Canow*, the *Sturgeon*  
 e *C* being this glaring light mounts to the Sur-  
 when face of the water where he is slain and  
 d som taken with a fisgig. *Salmons* and *Lampres*  
 tim

*Indians*  
*Sturgeon*  
*Fish*

*fire to*  
*catch*  
*Sturgeon*



*Indian  
Dexterity*

*Indian  
Way of  
Swimming*

*Blew &  
White  
Beads  
more  
Money*

are catch'd at the falls of Rivers. All Rivers of note in the Countrey have two or three desperate falls distant one from another for some miles, for it being rich ground from the Sea and mountainous within land, the Rivers having their Origin from great lakes, and hastning to the sea in their passage meeting with Rocks are not so easily worn away, as the loose earthie mould beneath the Rock, makes a fall of the water in some Rivers as high as a house: you would think it strange to see ye admire if you saw the bold Barbarians in their light Canows rush down the swift and headlong stream with desperate speed but with excellent dexterity, guiding the Canow that seldom or never it shoots under water or overturns, if it do they can swim naturally, striking their pawes under the throat like a dog, and not spreading their Arms as we do; they turn their Canows gain and go into it in the water.

Their Merchandize are their beads which are their money, of these there are two sorts, blew Beads and white Beads, the first is their Gold, the last their Silver, they work out of certain shells so cunningly that neither Jew nor Devil can counterfeit, they drill them and string them, and make many curious works with them to adorn

dorn the persons of their *Sagamours* and *madoorah*  
 principal men and young women, as Belts, *beside*  
 Girdles, Tablets, Borders for their womens  
 hair, Bracelets, Necklaces, and links to  
 hang in their ears. Prince Phillip a little  
 before I came for England coming to Boston } *P. Phillips*  
 had a Coat on and Buskins set thick with } *Embroidered*  
 these Beads in pleasant wild works and a } *Coat*  
 broad Belt of the same, his Accoutrements }  
 were valued at Twenty pounds. The Eng- } *price*  
 ish Merchant giveth them ten shillings a  
 fathom for their white, and as much more  
 or near upon for their blew Beads. Delicate  
 Sweet dishes too they make of *Birch-Bark*  
 strowed with threads drawn from *Spruce* or  
 white *Cedar-Roots*, and garnished on the  
 out-side with flourishd works, and on the  
 brims with glistering quills taken from the  
*Porcupine*, and dyed, some black, others red,  
 the white are natural, these they make of  
 all sizes from a dram cup to a dish contain-  
 ing a pottle, likewise Buckets to carry wa-  
 ter or the like, large Boxes too of the same  
 materials, dishes, spoons and trays wrought  
 very smooth and neatly out of the knots of  
 wood, baskets, bags, and matts woven with  
*Sparke*, bark of the *Line-Tree* and *Rushes*  
 of several kinds, dyed as before, some black,  
 blew, red, yellow, bags of *Porcupine* quills  
 woven and dyed also; Coats woven of  
 Turkie

*Pretty*  
*Birch*  
*Dishes*

*Dishes*  
*Spoons*  
*Trays*

*Baskets*

Cooks of Turkie-feathers for their Children, Tobacco  
 pipes - pipes of stone with Imagerie upon the  
 Birchen Kettles. Kettles of Birchen-bark which they use  
 before they traded with the French  
 Indian Women } Copper Kettles, by all which you may  
 Ingenious } apparently see that necessity was at first  
 the mother of all inventions. The women  
 are the workers of most of these, and are now  
 here and there one excellent needle woman  
 and will milk a Cow neatly, their rich  
 trade are Furs of divers sorts, Black  
 all sorts of Beaver, Otter, Bear, Sables, Matrices, Primaries  
 Furs } Wild-Cat, Rattoons, Martins, Musquams  
 Moose-skins. & Deer-skins }  
 Ships they have none, but do prettily  
 imitate ours in their Birchen-pinnaces, the  
 Canoes are made of Birch, they shape them  
 with flat Ribbs of white Cedar, and cover  
 them with large sheets of Birch-bark, covering  
 ing them through with strong threads  
 Spruce-Roots or white Cedar, and pitch them  
 with a mixture of Turpentine and the hard  
 rosen that is dried with the Air on the outside  
 side of the Bark of Firr-Trees. These will  
 carry half a dozen or three or four men with  
 and a considerable freight, in these they  
 swim to Sea twenty, nay forty miles, keeping  
 from the shore a league or two, sometimes  
 to shorten their voyage when they are  
 double a Cape they will put to shore, and



two of them taking up the *Canoe* carry it  
across the Cape or neck of land to the other  
side, and to Sea again; they will indure an  
incredible great Sea, mounting upon the  
working billowes like a piece of Corke;  
but they require skilful hands to guide  
them in rough weather, none but the Indi-  
ans scarce dare to undertake it, such like  
Vessels the Ancient Britains used, as *Lucan* +  
relates.

*Primum-cana salix, madefacta vimine, par-  
vam*

*Texitur in puppim, casoque induta juvenco,  
Velloris patiens tumidum super emicat am-  
nem.*

*Stagnante Pado, fusoque Brita-  
nna  
Navigat oceano—*

When Sicoris to his own banks restor'd  
Had left the field, of twigs, and willow board  
They made small Boats, cover'd with Bullocks  
hide,

in which they reacht the Rivers further side.  
So sail the Veneti if Padus flow,  
The Britains sail on their calm ocean so:  
So the Egyptians sail with woven Boats  
Of paper rushes in their Nilus Floats.

L

Their

*Indians*—Their Government is monarchical, the eldest proceeding from his loyns, is the Royetelet of the Tribe, and if he have Daughters, his Son dying without a Son: after the same manner, their law descends. *Chectadaback* was the chief Sachem or Royetelet of the *Massachusetts*, when the English first set down there. *Massasoit*, the great Sachem of the *Plimouth Indians*, whose dwelling was at a place called *Sowans*, about four miles distant from *New-Plimouth*. *Sagoy* was the chief Sachem of the *Pemuncquians* and *Mientoniack* of the *Narragansets*. The chief Royetelet amongst the *Mohawks* now living, is a Dutchmans Bastard, and the Royetelet now of the *Pocanakes*, that is of the *Plimouth-Indians*, is *Prince Philip* alias *Noble Mortacon*, the Grandson of *Massasoit*. Amongst the Eastern Indians, *Summerfant* formerly was a famous Sachem. The now living Sachems of note are *Sabaccaman*, *Terrumuck* and *Robinkood*.

Their Wars are with Neighbouring Tribes, but the *Mohawks* are enemies to all the other Indians, their weapons of defence and Offence are Bowes and Arrows. of late he is a poor Indian that is not

names  
of the  
great  
Sachems

*Mohawks*  
Enemies  
to all

ical, of two Guns, which they purchase of  
 from the French, and powder and shot, they are  
 is generally excellent marks men; their other  
 he weapons are *Tamahawks* which are staves  
 at a Six foot and a half long with a knob at  
 caught the end as round as a bowl, and as big as  
 air lance that we call the Jack or Mistress. Lances too  
 f *Sach* they have made (as I have said before)  
 when with broken sword blades, likewise they  
 asoit, have Hatchets and knives; but these are  
 ians, weapons of a latter date. They colour their  
 as, above red all over, supposing that it makes  
 th. So when the more terrible, they are lusty Soul-  
 Pequeles to see to and very strong, meer *Hercules*  
 sets. *Tamaguses*; their fights are by Ambushments  
 wks noted Surprises, coming upon one another  
 the Romawares. They will march a hundred  
 is miles through thick woods and swamps to  
 as the *Mowhaws* Country, and the *Mow-*  
 as *mon* wks into their Country, meeting some-  
 ormes in the woods, or when they come in-  
 ing *Sach* an *Enemies* Country build a rude fort  
 rrunt with *Pallizadoes*, having loop-holes out of  
 which they shoot their Arrows, and fire  
 bouring their Guns, pelting at one another a week or  
 nies month together; If any of them step out  
 of the Fort they are in danger to be taken  
 arrows prisoners by the one side or the other; that  
 ot made that gets the victory excoriates the hair-  
 scalp of the principal slain *Enemies* which  
 L 2 they

*Indian  
 Weapon a  
 Tamahawk*

*Lance*

*Indian*

*Warrs*

*Fort*

*Combat*

*Scalping*



they bear away in Triumph, their prisoners, the Indians, li  
 they bring home, the old men and women, li  
 they knock in the head, the young women, li  
 they keep, and the men of war they torture, li  
 to death, as the Eastern Indians did, li  
 Mowbams whilst I was there, they li  
 him to a Tree and make a great fire, li  
 him, then with sharp knives they cut off li  
 the first joynts of his fingers and toes, li  
 clap upon them hot Embers to sear, li  
 vains; so they cut him a pieces joynt, li  
 joynt, still applying hot Embers to the li  
 to stanch the blood, making the li  
 wretch to sing all the while: when Arms, li  
 Legs are gone, they fley off the skin, li  
 their Heads, and presently put on a Cap, li  
 burning Embers, then they open his li  
 and take out his heart, which while li  
 living in a manner they give to their li  
 Squaes, who are every one to have a li  
 it. These Barbarous Customs were li  
 amongst them more frequently before li  
 English came; but since by the great li  
 of the Almighty they are in a way li  
 Civilized and converted to Christianity, li  
 there being three Churches of li  
 thred together by the pains of Mr. li  
 Eliot and his Son, who Preaches to li  
 their Native language, and hath rend li  
 the Bible in that Language for the li

Fortage  
Indians

Indian  
Cruelty

East  
heart

3 Indian  
Churches

the *Indians*. These go clothed like the *Eng-Indians*  
 and live in framed houses, have flocks of *Civilians*  
 Corn and Cattle about them, which when  
 they are fat they bring to the *English* Mar-  
 s did the Hogs that they rear are counted  
 they the best in *New-England*. Some of their  
 fire b Sons have been brought up Scholars in  
 they *Harvard Colledge*, and I was told that there  
 toes, was but two Fellowes in that Colledge, and  
 o feare one of them was an *Indian*; some few of  
 oynt these *Christian Indians* have of late Apo-  
 to the tized and fallen back to their old Super-  
 the stition and course of life. *So far from original stock*  
 the Arm Thus much shall suffice concerning *New-England*  
 he sh *England*, as it was when the *Indians* solely  
 a Cap posselt it. I will now proceed to give you *in 65 years*  
 his an accompt of it, as it is under the manage-  
 ile itment of the *English*; but methinks I hear *from*  
 to their sceptick Readers muttering out of their *1606*  
 re a be cattle mouths, what will accrew to us by *to*  
 were this rambling *Logodiarce*? you do but bring  
 before draw into *Egypt*, a Countrey abounding *1671*  
 reat with Corn. Thus by these *Famacides* who  
 way are so minutely curious, I am dejected from  
 christi my hope, whilst they challenge the freedom  
 ndian of *David's* Ruffins, Our Tongues are our  
 Mr. town, whoshall controll us. I have done  
 to that what I can to please you, I have piped and  
 n rend you will not dance. I have told you as  
 e be strange things as ever you or your Fathers  
 L 3 have

have heard. The Italian saith *Chi vide miraculo facilmente ne crede un altro*, he hath seen one miracle will easily believe another, *miranda canunt sed non credunt poeta*. Oh I see the pad, you never heard saw the like, therefore you do not believe me; well Sirs I shall not strain your belief any further, the following Relation I will be more tolerable, yet I could (if possible) insert as wonderful things as my pen hath yet gone over, and may, it must be upon condition you will not me to the proof of it. *Nemo tenetur impossibilia*, no man is obliged to do more than is in his power, is a rule in law. To shew, if you cannot with the Bee gather honey, with the Spider suck out the poyson as Sir John Davis hath it.

*The Bee and Spider by a divers power  
Suck honey and poyson from the self-same flower*

I am confident you will get but little poyson here, no 'tis the poyson of Ambrosia under your tongue that swells you: truly do take you rather to be Spider caught than Spiders, such as will not laudably employ themselves, nor suffer others; you may well say *non amo hominem, sed non*



*sum dicere quare*, unless it be because I am  
Veroneffa, no Romancer. To conclude ;  
if with your mother wit, you can mend  
the matter, take pen in hand and fall to  
work, do your Countrey some service as I  
have done according to my Talent. Hence-  
forth you are to expect no more Relations  
from me. I am now return'd into my  
Native Countrey, and by the providence of  
the Almighty, and the bounty of my Royal  
Sovereigness am disposed to a holy quiet of  
study and meditation for the good of my  
Soul; and being blessed with a transmentita-  
tion or change of mind, and weaned from  
the world, may take up for my word, *non  
est mortale quod opto*. If what I have done is  
thought uprears for the approvment of  
those to whom it is intended, I shall be more  
than meanly contented.

New-England was first discovered by  
John Cabota and his Son Sebastian in Anno — 1514 —  
Dom. 1514. A further discovery afterwards  
was made by the honourable Sir Walter  
Rawleigh Knight in Anno 1584. when as Vir- — 1584 —  
ginia was discovered, which together with  
Mary-land, New-England, Nova Scotia was  
known by one common name to the Indians,  
*Wingandicoa*, and by Sir Walter Rawleigh  
in honour of our Virgin Queen, in whole  
name he took possession of it, *Virginia*. In  
L 4 King

1602

King James his Reign it was divided into Provinces as is before named. In 1602 the north parts were further discovered by Capt. Bartholomew Gosnold. The first English that planted there, set down not far from Narragansett-Bay, and called their Colony

first Settled

Plimouth, since old Plimouth, An. Dom.

Sir John Popham Lord chief Justice authorized by his Majesty, King James, the Colony of English to Sagadebock, An.

1606 —

Newfound-land was discovered by one drew Thorn an English man in Anno

1527 —

Sir Humphrey Gilbert a west Country Knight took possession of it in the Queen's name, Anno 1582. The two first Colonies in New-England failing, there was a supply of English who set down in other parts of the Countrey, and have continued in a flourishing condition to this day.

1582 —

The whole Countrey now is divided into Colonies, and for your better understanding observe, a Colony is a sort of people that come to inhabit a place before not inhabited, or *Colonus quasi*, because they shall be Tillers of the Earth. From hence by usual figure the Countrey where they set down, is called a Colony or Plantation.

The first of these that I shall relate though last in possession of the English is now our most Southerly Colony, and is

(153)

Now

New York

Sold by Dutch

1608

1664

New York

adjoyning to *Mary-land*, scil. the *Manadaes*  
or *Manabanent* lying upon the great River  
*Mobegan*, which was first discovered by Mr.  
*Hudson*, and sold presently by him to the  
Dutch without Authority from his Sove-  
rign the King of *England*, Anno 1608.  
The Dutch in 1614 began to plant there, and  
call'd it *New-Netherlands*, but Sir *Samuel*  
*Argal* Governour of *Virginia* routed them,  
the Dutch after this got leave of King *James*  
to put in there for fresh water in their pas-  
sage to *Brasile*, and did not offer to plant  
until a good while after the *English* were  
settled in the Countrey. In Anno 1664 his  
Majestic *Charles* the Second sent over four  
worthie Gentlemen Commissioners to re-  
duce the Colonies into their bounds, who  
had before incroached upon one another,  
who marching with Three hundred red-  
Coats to *Manadaes* or *Manhataes* took from  
the Dutch their chief town then called  
*New-Amsterdam*, now *New York*, the Twenty  
ninth of *August* turn'd out their Governour  
with a silver leg, and all but those that were  
willing to acknowledge subjection to the  
King of *England*, suffering them to enjoy  
their houses and estates as before. Thirteen  
days after Sir *Robert Carr* took the Fort and  
Town of *Auravie* now called *Albany*; and  
Twelve days after that, the Fort and Town  
of



of *Ausapba*, then *De-la-ware* Castle, made with *Dutch* and *Sweeds*. So now the *Engl* are matters of three handsome Towns three strong Forts and a Castle, not less than one man. The first Governour of the parts for the King of *England* was *Colo* *Nicols*, a noble Gentleman, and one of *Majesties* Commissioners, who coming to *England* in *Anno Dom. 1668* as *Italy* surrendered the Government to *Colo* *Longlace*.

*From Gov*  
*1668*  
*new York* The Countrey here is bless'd with the richest soil in all *New-England*, I have been it reported from men of Judgement and integrity, that one Bushel of *Europe* *Wheat* hath yielded a hundred in one year. Their other Commodities are *Furs*, and

*+ new north* *I keep* *river or Hudsons River*  
*New-York* is situated at the mouth of the great River *Mohegan*, and is built with *Dutch* Brick all-moderna, the meanest house therein being valued at One hundred pounds, to the Landward it is compassed with a Wall of good thickness; at the entrance of the River is an Island well fortified, and hath command of any Ship that shall attempt to pass without their leave.

*Albany* is situated upon the same River on the West-side, and is due North from *New-York* somewhat above Fifty miles.

*Albany*  
*100 miles*

*built by*  
*70 Dutch*

Along the Sea-side Eastward are many English-Towns, as first *Westchester*, a Sea-Town about Twenty miles from *New-York*; to the Eastward of this is *Greenwich*, another Sea-Town much about the same distance; then *Chichester*, *Fairfield*, *Straiford*, *Milford*, all Sea-Towns twenty and thirty mile distant from one another, twenty miles Eastward of *Milford* is *Newhaven* the Metropolis of the Colony begun in 1637. One Mr. *Eaton* being there Governour: it is near to the shoals of *Cape Cod*, and is one of the four united Colonies.

The next Sea-Town Eastward of *Newhaven* is called *Guliford* about ten mile, and I think belonging to that Colony.

From *Guliford* to *Connecticut-River*, is near upon twenty miles, the fresh River *Connecticut* bears the name of another Colony begun in the year 1636 and is also one of the four united Colonies. Upon this River are situated 13 Towns, within two, three or four miles off one another. At the mouth of the River, on the West-side is the *Lord-Say*, and *Brooks fort*, called *Saybrook-fort*. Beyond this Northward is the Town of *Windsor*, then *Northampton*, then *Pinsers-house*. On the Eastside of the River, *Hartford*, about it low land well stored with meadow and very fertile. *Wethersfield* is also

1637

1636 -  
Connecticut  
Colony

Witches

Long

Rhode  
Island

also situated upon *Connecticut River* at *Springfield*; but this Town although seated, is in the jurisdiction of the *Massachusetts*, and hath been infamous by reason of Witches therein. *Hidley* lyes to the Northward of *Springfield*. *New-London* which take to be in the jurisdiction of this Colony is situated to the Eastward of *Connecticut-River* by a small River, and is not far from the Sea. From *Connecticut-River* *Island* stretcheth it self to *Mohegan* hundred and twenty miles, but it is narrow and about sixteen miles from the main; the considerablest Town upon it is *Southampton* built on the Southside of the Island towards the Eastern end: opposite to this on the Northernside is *Feversham*, Westward is *Alshford*, *Huntingdon*, &c. The Island is well stored with Sheep and other Cattle, and Corn, and is reasonable populous. Between this Island and the mouth of *Connecticut-River* lyeth three small Islands *Shelter-Island*, *Fishers-Island*, and the *Isle of Wight*. Over against *New-London* full South lyeth *Block-Island*.

The next place of note on the Main is *Narragansets-Bay*, within which Bay *Rhode-Island* a Harbour for the *Shunamites* Brethren, as the Saints Errant, ~~who are~~ who are rather to be esteemed Vagabonds than Religious persons, &c.



(157)

At the further end of the Bay by the mouth of Narragansets-River, on the South-side thereof was old *Plimouth* plantation Anno 1602. Twenty mile out to Sea, South of *Rhode-Island*, lyeth *Martins vineyard* in the way to *Virginia*, this Island is governed by a discreet Gentleman Mr. *Mayberr* by name. To the Eastward of *Martins* vinyard lyeth *Nantocket-Island*, and further Eastward *Elizabeths-Island*, these Islands are twenty or thirty mile asunder, and now we are come to *Cape-Cod*.

*Cape-Cod* was so called at the first by Captain *Gosnold* and his Company Anno Dom. 1602, because they took much of that fish there; and afterward was called *Cape-James* by Captain *Smith*: the point of the Cape is called *Point-Cave* and *Tuckers Terror*, and by the French and Dutch *Mallacar*, by reason of the perillous shoals. The first place to be taken notice of on the South-side of the Cape is *Wests-Harbour*, the first Sea-Town *Sandwich* formerly called *Duxbury* in the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*. Doubling the Cape we come into the great Bay, on the West whereof is *New-Plimouth-Bay*, on the Southwest-end of this Bay is situated *New Plimouth*, the first *English-Colony* that took firm possession in this Countrey, which was in 1620, and the first Town built there.

1602

*Cape Cod*  
1602

*firm*  
*settled*  
1620

Newplmouth

(158)

41:39

40 Churches

Timber  
for  
Shipping

therein, whose longitude is 315 degrees, latitude 41 degrees and 37 minutes, it was built nine years before any other Town from the beginning of it to 1669 is now forty years, in which time there hath been an increasing of forty Churches in this Colony (but many more in the rest,) the Towns in all New-England one hundred and twenty, for the most part along the Sea-Coasts, (as being wholsome) somewhat more than two hundred miles only on Connecticut-River (as I have said) is thirteen Towns not far off one another.

The other Towns of note in this Colony are Green-Harbour to the Eastward of the mouth towards the point of the Cape, & there fore somewhat unaccessible by land, here is excellent Timber for shipping; then Marshfield, Yarmouth, Rehoboth, Bridgewater, Warwick, Taunton, Eastham, by the Indians called Namset.

The first Town Northeast from Green-Harbor is Situate in the jurisdiction of the Massachusetts-Colony, more Northward of the Situate is Conchusset and Hull a little Burgh lying open to the Sea, from thence we came to Merton-point over against which is Pulling-point. Upon Merton-point (which is on the Larboard-side) is a Town called Nantasket, which is two Leagues from Boston, where Ships

Ships commonly cast Anchor. Pullin point  
is called, because the Boats are by the  
Town leading or Roads haled against the Tide  
which is very strong, it is the usual Channel  
th best Boats to pass into *Massachusetts-Bay*.

There is an Island on the South-side of  
the passage containing eight Acres of  
ground. Upon a rising hill within this Island  
is mounted a Castle commanding the en-  
terance, no stately Edifice, nor strong; built  
with Brick and Stone, kept by a Captain,  
under whom is a master-Gunner and others.  
The Bay is large, made by many Islands,  
the chief *Deere-Island*, which is within a  
short shot of *Pullin-point*, great store of  
them were wont to swim thither from the  
main; then *Bird-Island*, *Glass-Island*, *Slate-Island*,  
the Governours Garden, where the  
Apple-Trees in the Countrey were  
planted, and a vinyard; then *Round-Island*,  
and *Noddles-Island* not far from *Charles-  
Town*: most of these Islands lye on the  
North-side of the Bay.

The next Town to *Nantascot* on the  
South-side of the Bay is *Wissagusset* a small  
village, about three miles from *Mount-  
Pullin-wolleston*, about this Town the soil is very  
fertile.

Within sight of this is *Mount-wolleston* or  
*Merry-mount*, called *Massachusetts-fields*,  
where

*Castle*

*Deer swim*

*Fruit  
apple Tree*



where *Chicatabas* the greatest *Sagamore* of the Country lived before the plague: the Town of *Braintree* is seated, no Ship can come near to it, here is an *Iron mill*: to the West of this Town is the *Naponset-River*.

Six miles beyond *Brainree* lyeth *Dorchester*, a frontire Town pleasantly seated and of large extent into the main body and wings filled somewhat with houses to the number of two hundred and more, beautified with fair Orchards and Gardens, having also plenty of land, and store of Cattle, counted the chiefest Town heretofore in *New-England*, now gives way to *Boston*, it hath a Harbour to the North for Ships.

A mile from *Dorchester* is the Town of *Roxbury*, a fair and handsome County Town, the streets large, the Inhabitants rich, replenished with Orchards and dens, well watered with springs and freshets, a brook runs through it called *Smelt River*, a quarter of a mile to the North of the Town runs stony River: it is in the bottom of a shallow Bay, but hath a harbour for shipping. Boats come to it with store of Land and Cattle.

Two miles Northeast from *Roxbury*, is

Forty miles from *New-Plimouth*, in the latitude of 42 or 43 degrees and 10 minutes, in the bottom of *Massachusetts-Bay* is *Boston* whose longitude is 315 degrees, or as others will 322 degrees and 30 seconds. ) So called from a Town in *Lincolnshire*, which in the *Saxons* time bare the name of *St. Dunstons*, and is the Metropolis of this County, or rather of the whole Countrey, situated upon a *Peninsula*, about four miles in compass, almost square, and invironed with the Sea, saving one small *Isthmus* which gives access to other Towns by land of the South-side. The Town hath two hills of equal height on the frontire part thereof, at the Sea, the one well fortified on the Harbourside with some Artillery mounted, commanding any Ship as she sails into the Town harbour within the still Bay; the other hill hath a very strong battery built of whole Timber and fill'd with earth, at the descent of the hill in the extreamest part thereof; and betwixt these two strong Arms, lyes a large *Smother Bay*, on which the chiefeest part of the Town is built, to the Northwest is a high mountain that out-tops all, with its three little rising hills on the summit called *ramounts*, this is furnished with a Beacon and great Guns, from hence you may over-

look

42 or 43  
Boston

4  
M. de R. round

*Built up  
in  
Boston*

look all the Islands in the Bay, and deli-  
such Ships as are upon the Coast :  
houses are for the most part raised on  
Sea-banks and wharfed out with great  
dustury and cost, many of them standing  
on piles, close together on each side  
streets as in London, and furnished with  
ny fair shops, their materials are Br  
Stone, Lime, handsomely contrived, w  
three meeting Houses or Churches, and  
Town-house built upon pillars where  
Merchants may confer, in the Chambers  
bove they keep their monethly Court  
Their streets are many and large, pav  
with pebble stone, and the South-side adom  
ed with Gardens and Orchards. The Tow  
is rich and very populous, much frequen  
by strangers, here is the dwelling of the  
Governour. On the North-west and North  
east two constant Fairs are kept for da  
Traffick thereunto. On the South there is  
small, but pleasant Common where the G  
lants a little before Sun-set walk with the  
Marmalet-Madams, as we do in Morefield  
&c, till the nine a clock Bell rings the  
home to their respective habitations, wh  
presently the Constables walk their rounds  
to see good orders kept, and to take  
loose people. Two miles from the tow



at a place called *Muddy-River*, the Inhabitants have Farms, to which belong rich arable grounds and meadows where they keep their Cattle in the Summer, and bring them to *Boston* in the Winter; the Harbour before the Town is filled with Ships and other Vessels for most part of the year.

*Hingham* is a Town situated upon the Sea-coasts, South-east of *Charles-River*: here is great store of Timber, deal-boards, masts for Ships, white-Cedar, and fish is here to be had.

*Dedham* an inland-town ten miles from *Boston* in the County of *Suffolk* well watered with many pleasant streams, and abounding with Garden fruit; the Inhabitants are Husbandmen, somewhat more than one hundred families, having store of Cattle and Corn.

The Town of *Weymouth* lyes open to the Sea, on the East Rocks and Swamps, to the South-ward good store of Deer, arable land and meadows.

On the North-side of *Boston* flows *Charles-River*, which is about six fathom deep, many small Islands lye to the Bayward, and hills on either side the River, a very good harbour, here may forty Ships ride, the passage from *Boston* to *Charles-Town* is by a Ferry worth forty or fifty pounds a

year, and is a quarter of a mile over. River *Mistick* runs through the right side of the Town, and by its near approach

*Charles-River* in one place makes a narrow neck, where stands most part of the Town, the market-place not far from the waterside is surrounded with houses, forth of which issue two streets of houses built and beautified with Orchards and Gardens, their meeting-house stands on the North-side of the market, having a hill behind it; there belongs to this Town one thousand and two hundred Acres of arable, four hundred head of Cattle, as many Sheep, these also provide themselves Farms in the Country.

Up higher in *Charles-River* westward is a broad Bay two miles over, into which runs *Stony-River* and *Muddy-River*.

Towards the South-west in the middle of the Bay is a great Oyster-bank, towards the North-west is a Creek; upon the shore is situated the village of *Medford*, it is a mile and half from *Charles-town*.

At the bottom of the Bay the River begins to be narrower, half a quarter of a mile broad; by the North-side of the River is *New-town*, three miles from *Charles-town* a league and half by water, it was first

1200 Acres  
200 Cattle  
200 Sheep

*New Town*

(165)

ended for a City, the neatest and best com-  
acted Town, having many fair structures  
and handfom contrived streets; the Inha-  
bitants rich, they have many hundred Acres  
of land paied with one common fence a  
mile and half long, and store of Cattle; it  
is now called *Cambridge* where is a Colledge  
for Students of late; it stretcheth from  
*Charles-River* to the Southern part of  
*Merrimach-River*.

Half a mile thence on the same side of  
the River is *Water-town* built upon one of  
the branches of *Charles-River*, very fruitful  
and of large extent, watered with many  
pleasant springs and small Rivulets, the  
inhabitants live scatteringly. Within half a  
mile is a great pond divided between the  
two Towns, a mile and half from the  
Town is a fall of fresh waters which con-  
tinue themselves into the Ocean through  
*Charles-River*, a little below the fall of  
waters they have a wair to catch fish, where-  
in they take store of *Basse*, *Shades*, *Alwives*,  
trout fish and *Smelts*, in two tides they have  
often one hundred thousand of these  
fishes. They have store of Cattle and Sheep,  
and near upon two thousand Acres of a-  
mountable land, Ships of small burden may  
come up to these Towns.

M 3

We

*Charles Town*

*Cambridge  
Colledge*

*Water Town*

*100-000 fish  
in 2 Tides*



*Mistick*

We will now return to *Charles-town* again, where the River *Mistick* runs on the North-side of the Town (that is the side as before said) where on the North-side of the River is the Town of *Mistick* three miles from *Charles-town*, a league and half by water, a scattered village the head of this River are great and spacious ponds, full of *Alewives* in the spring time, the notedst place for this sort of fish. On the West of this River is *Mr. Craddock's* plantation, where he impales a park.

*Malden*

Upon the same River and on the North-side is the Town of *Malden*.

The next Town is *Winnifmet* a mile from *Charles-town*, the River only parts them, this is the last Town in the still of *Massachusetts*.

*Linn*

Without *Pullin-point*, six miles North-east from *Winnifmet* is *Cawgust*, or *Sagut* or *Sangut* now called *Linn*, situated at the bottom of a Bay near a River, which upon the breaking up of winter with a furious Torrent vents it self into the Sea, the Town consists of more than one hundred dwelling-houses, their Church being built on a level undefended from the North-west wind is made with steps descending

into the Earth, their streets are straight and  
 out thin of houses, the people most hus-  
 bandmen. At the end of the *Sandy beach*  
 a neck of land called *Nabant*, it is six  
 miles in circumference. Black *William* an *Indian Gift*  
 Indian Duke out of his generosity gave this  
 to the *English*. At the mouth of the River  
 runs a great Creek into a great marsh called  
*Bumney* marsh, which is four miles long,  
 and a mile broad, this Town hath the benefit  
 of minerals of divers kinds, Iron, Lead, *Iron Mill*  
 some Iron mill, store of Cattle, Arable land  
 and meadow.

To the North-ward of *Linn* is *Marvil*  
*Marble-head*, a small Harbour, the shore  
 rocky, upon which the Town is built, con-  
 sisting of a few scattered houses; here they  
 have stages for fishermen, Orchards and  
 Gardens, half a mile within land good pa-  
 stures and Arable land.

Four miles North of *Marble-head* is si- *New Salem*  
 tuated *New-Salem* ( whose longitude is 315  
 degrees, and latitude 42 degrees 35 mi-  
 nutes ) upon a plain, having a River on the  
 south, and another on the North, it hath  
 two Harbours, Winter Harbour and Sum-  
 mer Harbour which lyeth within *Darbie's*  
 port, they have store of Meadow and  
 Arable, in this Town are some very rich  
 Merchants.

Glocester

Upon the Northern Cape of the *Massachusetts*, that is *Cape-Ann* a place of fishing is situated, the Town of *Glocester* was the first Town built in that Colony, here is a Harbour for Ships.

To the North-ward of *Cape-Ann* is *Wenham*, a dangerous place to sail by stormie weather, by reason of the many Rocks and foaming breakers.

Ipswich

The next Town that presents it self in view is *Ipswich* situated by a fair River whose first rise is from a Lake or Pond twenty mile up, betaking its course through a hideous *Swamp* for many miles, a Harbour for *Bears*, it issueth forth into a large Bay (where they fish for *Whales*) due East of the mouth of that River is a great place of fishing, the mouth of that River is barred it is a good haven-town, their meeting house or Church is beautifully built, full of Orchards and Gardens, land for husbandry and Cattle.

Bears

*Wenham* is an inland Town very well watered, lying between *Salem* and *Ipswich* consisteth most of men of judgment and experience in *re rustica*, well stored with Cattle. At the first rise of *Ipswich* River in the highest part of the land near the head of the River



Springs of many considerable Rivers; *Salem* one of the most considerable branches of *Merrimach* River, and also at the rise of *Mistick* River, and ponds full of pleasant Springs, is situated *Woburn* an inland-Town four miles square beginning at the end of *Charles-town* bounds. *Woburn*

Six miles from *Ipswich* North-east is *Rowley*, most of the Inhabitants have been Clothiers.

Nine miles from *Salem* to the North is *Agowamine*, the best and spaciousest place for a plantation, being twenty leagues to the Northward of *New-Plimouth*.

Beyond *Agowamin* is situated *Hampton* near the Sea-coasts not far from *Merrimach*-River, this Town is like a *Flower-deluce*, having two streets of houses wheeling off from the main body thereof, they have great store of salt Marshes and Cattle, the land is fertile, but full of Swamps and Rocks.

Eight miles beyond *Agowamin* runneth the delightful River *Merrimach* or *Monumach*, it is navigable for twenty miles, and well stored with fish, upon the banks grow stately Oaks, excellent Ship timber, not inferior to our *English*. *Oaks*

On the South-side of *Merrimach*-River twelve

Newberrie

twelve miles from Ipswich, and near upon the wide venting streams thereof is situated Newberrie, the houses are scattering well stored with meadow, upland, and Arable, and about four hundred head of Cattle.

Salisbury

Over against Newberrie lyes the Town of Salisbury, where a constant Ferry is kept the River being here half a mile broad, the Town scatteringly built.

Andover

Hard upon the River of Shashin where Merrimach receives this and the other branch into its body, is seated Andover, the land red with land and Cattle.

Haverhill

Beyond this Town by the branch of Merrimach-River called Shashin, lyeth Haverhill, a Town of large extent about ten miles in length, the inhabitants Husbandmen, this Town is not far from Salisbury.

Malden

Over against Haverhill lyeth the Town of Malden, which I have already mentioned.

Concord

In a low level upon a fresh River a branch of Merrimach is seated Concord, the first inland Town in Massachusetts patent, well stored with fish, Salmon, Dace, Alewife, Shade, &c. abundance of fresh marsh and Cattle, this place is subject to bitter frosts.

The

The next Town is *Sudbury* built upon the same River where *Concord* is, but further up; to this Town likewise belongs great store of fresh marshes, and Arable land, and they have many Cattle, it lyeth low, by reason whereof it is much indammaged with floods.

In the Centre of the Countrey by a great pond side, and not far from *Woeburn*, is situated *Reading*, it hath two mills, a saw-mill and a Corr-mill, and is well stocked with Cattle.

The Colony is divided into four Counties, the first is *Suffolk*, to which belongs *Dorchester*, *Roxbury*, *Weymouth*, *Hingham*, *Dedham*, *Braintree*, *Sittuate*, *Hull*, *Nantascot*, *Wiscagasset*. The second County is *Middlesex*, to this belongs *Charles-town*, *Watertown*, *Cambridge*, *Concord*, *Sudbury*, *Woeburn*, *Reading*, *Malden*, *Mistick*, *Medford*, *Winnisimmet* and *Marble-head*. To the third County which is *Essex*, belongs *New-Salem*, *Lynn*, *Ipswich*, *New-Berry*, *Rowley*, *Glocester*, *Wenham* and *Andover*. The fourth County is *Northfolk*, to this belongs *Salisbury*, *Hampton* and *Haverhill*.

In the year of our Lord 1628, Mr. *John Endicott* with a number of English people set down by *Cape-Ann* at that place called  
af-

1628



*Gloster* afterwards *Gloster*, but their abiding-place was at *Salem*, where they built a Town in 1639. and there they gathered their first Church, consisting but of Seventy persons; but afterwards increased to forty three Churches in joynt Communion with another, and in those Churches were above Seven thousand, seven hundred and fifty Souls, Mr. *Endicot* was chosen their first Governour.

1630 — The Twelfth of July Anno Dom. 1630

*L*  
95000

*Horses*  
*Cost*

12000

*Acres*

45000

*Houses*

13000

*arms*

21000

Total expence 192,000 —

*John Wentworth* Esq; and the assistants, arrived with the Patent for the *Massachusetts*, the passage of the people that came along with him in ten Vessels came to 95000 pound: the Swine, Goats, Sheep, Neat, Horses cost to transport 12000 pound, besides the price they cost them; getting food for the people till they could clear the ground of wood amounted to 45000 pound: Nails, Glass, and other Iron work for their meeting and dwelling houses 13000 pound; Arms, Powder, Bullets, and Match, together with their Artillery 22000 pound, the whole sum amounts unto One hundred ninety two thousand pounds. They set down first upon *Noddle-Island*, afterwards they began to build upon the main. In 1637 there were not many houses in the Town of

*Boston*,

Boston, amongst which were two houses of entertainment called Ordinaries, into which if a stranger went, he was presently followed by one appointed to that Office, who would thrust himself into his company uninvited, and if he called for more drink than the Officer thought in his judgment he could soberly bear away, he would presently countermand it, and appoint the proportion, beyond which he could not get one drop.

*Case to  
proceed  
Incomparance*

The Patent was granted to Sir Henry Roswell, Sir John Young Knight, Thomas Southcoat, John Humphrey, John Endicott and Simon Whitecomb, and to their Heirs, Assigns, and Associates for ever. These took to them other Associates, as Sir Richard Saltonstall, Isaac Johnson, Samuel Aldersey, Jo. Ven, Matth. Craddock, George Harwood, Increase Nowell, Rich. Perry, Rich. Bellingham, Nathaniel Wright, Samuel Vassell, Theophilus Eaton, Thomas Goffe, Thomas Adams, Jo. Brown, Samuel Brown, Thomas Hutchins, Will Vassell, Will. Pinchon and George Foxcroft. Matth. Craddock was ordained and constituted Governour by Patent, and Thomas Goffe Deputy Governour of the said Company, the rest Assistants.

That part of New-England granted to these

Extent  
by  
Charter

these fore-mentioned Gentlemen lyeth and extendeth between a great River called Monumach, alias Merrimach, and the often frequented Charles-River, being in the bottom of a Bay called Massachusetts, alias Mattachusetts, alias Massatusets-bay; and all those lands within the space of three English miles, on the South part of the said Charles-River, or any or every part, and all the lands within three miles to the Southward part of the Massachusetts-bay, and all those lands which lye within the space of three English miles to the North-ward of the River Merrimach, or to the Northward of any and every part thereof, and all lands whatsoever within the limits aforesaid, North and South, in latitude, and in breadth and length and longitude of and within all the main land there, from the Atlantick and Western-Sea and Ocean on the East-part, to the South-Sea on the West-part, and all lands and grounds, place and places, soils, woods and wood-groves, Havens, Ports, Rivers, Waters, fishings and Hereditaments whatsoever lying within the aforesaid lands and limits, and every part and parcel thereof, and also all Islands lying in America aforesaid in the said Seas, or either of them on the Western or Eastern Coasts



Coasts or parts of the said tracts of lands.  
 Also all mines and minerals as well Royal  
 of Gold, Silver, as others &c. With power  
 to rule and govern both Sea and land,  
 holden of the East manner of *Greenwich*  
*in Com. Kent*, in free and common soc-  
 age, yielding and paying to the King the  
 fifth part of the Oar of Gold and Silver  
 which shall be found at any time,

This Colony is a body Corporated and  
 Politick in fact by the name of the Gover-  
 nour and Company of the *Mattachusetts*  
 in *New-England*.

That there shall be one Governour, and  
 Deputy-Governour, and Eighteen Assistants  
 of the same Company from time to  
 time.

That the Governour and Deputy-Gover-  
 nour, Assistants and all other Officers to be  
 chosen from amongst the freemen, the last  
*Wednesday in Easter-term* yearly in the ge-  
 neral Court.

The Governour to take his Corporal  
 Oath to be true and faithful to the Govern-  
 ment, and to give the same Oath to the o-  
 ther Officers.

To

(176)

To hold a Court once a month, and seven to be a sufficient Court.

And that there shall be four general Courts kept in Term time, and one general and soleinn Assembly to make Laws and Ordinances; So they be not contrary and repugnant to the Laws and Statutes of the Realm of *England*. Their form of Government and what their Laws concern you may see in the ensuing Table.

---

The

---

(177)

and  
ne g  
ake L  
cont  
tatute  
of G  
conce

Th

1 Magistrates. } Governour  
Affistants. } 2 Counsellors.  
2 Judges } 1 of the whole  
Country.  
2 of each Town.  
2 People. } 1 of the  
whole Country. } 1 for their protection.  
2 of each Town, concerning. } 2 for their provision.  
} 1 their lands.  
} 2 their Treasure.

1 Civil & they concern } 1 The publick State, or  
2 Particular persons.  
} 1 in their personal Inheritances, and proprieties

Whether between the members of their own Commonwealth & they are. } 2 either of Trespasses or 2 of Capital Crimes.  
2 Criminal. } 2 In their mutual commerce, whether in way  
} 1 Of buying and selling.  
} 2 Lending and borrowing.

2 Between Burgeses and the people, and forraign Nations, whether in case. } 1 That we do them wrong.  
} 2 That they do us wrong.

P

Ann



(178)

Laws  
made  
1646

Anno Dom. 1646. they drew up a bo  
of their Laws for the well ordering of the  
Commonwealth, as they not long  
termed it.

The military part of their Com  
wealth is governed by one Major-Gen  
and three Serjeant Majors ; to the M  
General belongeth particularly the  
of *Boston*, to the three Serjeant Major  
long the four Counties, but with  
mission to the Major-General. The fir  
jeant Major chosen for the County of  
folk was Major *Gibbons*. For the Count  
*Middlesex* Major *Sedgwick*. For the Co  
of *Essex* and *Northfolk* Major *Denison*.

Every Town sends two Burgesses to  
great and solemn general Court.

For being drunk, they either whip  
pose a fine of Five shillings, so for swea  
and curling, or boring through the t  
with a hot Iron.

For kissing a woman in the street, th  
in way of civil salute, whipping or a fi

For Single fornication whipping  
fine.

For Adultery, put to death, and  
Witchcraft.

An *English* woman suffering an Indi  
have carnal knowledge of her, ha  
*Indian* cut out exactly in red cloth

upon her right Arm, and enjoyned to wear it twelve moneths.

Scolds they gag and set them at their doors for certain hours, for all comers and goers by to gaze at.

Stealing is punished with restoring four fold, if able; if not, they are sold for some years, and so are poor debtors.

If you desire a further inspection to their Laws, I must refer you to them being in print, too many for to be inserted into this Relation.

The Governments of their Churches are Independent and Presbyterial, every Church (for so they call their particular Congregations) have one Pastor, one Teacher, Ruling Elders and Deacons.

They that are members of their Churches have the Sacraments administred to them, the rest that are out of the pale as they phrase it, are denyed it. Many hundred Souls there be amongst them grown up to men & womens estate that were never Christened.

They judge every man and woman to pay Five shillings per day, who comes not to their Assemblies, and impose fines of forty shillings and fifty shillings on such as meet together to worship God.

*These Hypocrites fled from Persecution  
yet as soon as they get (180) Power they*  
*Persecute* { Quakers they whip, banish, and hang  
*Others* { they return again.  
Anabaptists they imprison, fine and  
weary-out.

*Their* The Government both Civil and Ecclesiastical is in the hands of the thorough-  
*Character* Independents and rigid Presbyterians.

*Money* The great Goddons, or great masters,  
*Collected* also some of their Merchants are dam-  
rich; generally all of their judgements  
inexplicably covetous and proud, they re-  
ceive your gifts but as an homage or tribute  
due to their transcendancy, which is a fault  
their Clergie are also guilty of, whose living  
is upon the bounty of their hearers. On  
Sundays in the afternoon when Sermons  
ended the people in the Galleries come  
down and march two a breast up one  
and down the other, until they come before  
the desk, for Pulpit they have none: before  
the desk is a long pulpit where the Elders and  
Deacons sit; one of them with a money  
box in his hand, into which the people  
they pass put their offering, some a shilling  
Some two shillings, half a Crown, five  
lings according to their ability and good  
will, after this they conclude with a Prayer  
but this by the way.

*a* The chiefest objects of discipline, Religion  
*Charge* but with too much Equity



on, and morality they want, some are of a  
 Linſie-woolſie diſpoſition, of ſeveral profeſ-  
 ſions in Religion, all like *Eſbiopians* white  
 on the Teeth, only full of ludification and  
 ſpurious dealing, and cruelty the extreameſt  
 of all vices. The chiefſt cauſe of Noah's  
 Flood, Prov. 27. 26. *Agni erant ad veſtitum*  
 ſum, is a frequent Text among them, no  
 trading for a ſtranger with them, but with  
 Gracian faith, which is not to part with  
 your ware without ready money, for they  
 are generally in their payments recuſant  
 as a ſlow, great Syndies, or cenſors, or con-  
 trollers of other mens manners, and ſavagely  
 malicious amongſt themſelves,  
 There are main travelling women too,  
 in Salomon's ſence ) more the pittie, when  
 a woman hath loſt her Chaſtity, ſhe hath no  
 more to loſe.  
 But miſtake me not to general ſpeeches,  
 but the guilty take exceptions, there  
 many ſincere and religious people  
 amongſt them, deſeried by their charity and  
 ſimilarity ( the true Characters of Chriſti-  
 anity ) by their Z-nodochie or hoſpitality,  
 their hearty ſubmiſſion to their Sove-  
 reign the King of England, by their dili-  
 gent and honeſt labour in their callings,  
 amongſt theſe we may account the Royaliſt,  
 who are lookt upon with an evil eye and  
 tongue,

+  
 Huſe Peoel  
 deſe lile  
 f  
 Lino Peoel  
 capnet  
 Choeſe Peoel  
 ſher to lile  
 Jan 1764  
 Leneve  
 Lile  
 Peoel  
 Peoel  
 Peoel  
 Peoel

Some Good

tongue, bouted or punished if they chance to lash out, the tame *Indian* ( for so they call those that are born in the Country ) are pretty honest too, and may in good time be known for honest Kings men.

*Fruitfull*

They have store of Children, and well accommodated with Servants; many hands make light work, many hands make a full freight, but many mouths eat up as some old planters have experimented, these some are *English*, others *Negroes*; the *English* there are can eat till they swell and work till they freeze; & of the former that are like *Mrs. Winters* paddocks, very tender finger'd in cold weather.

*Humorous*

*old Bands*

*Witches*

There are none that beg in the Country but there be Witches too many, bottled - ~~up in bottles~~ <sup>up in bottles</sup> ~~up in bottles~~ <sup>up in bottles</sup>, others that produce many strange apparitions if you will believe report, of a *Shallop* Sea man'd with women, of a Ship and great red Horse standing by the main-mast the Ship being in a small Cove to the seaward vanished of a sudden. Of a Witch that appeared aboard of a Ship two leagues to Sea to a Mariner who took the Carpenters broad Axe and clef'd his head with it, the Witch dying of the wound at home, with such like bugbears and ridiculous tales.

*Stories*

*Paddocks nick name for Whores*

(183)

first settled in 1620

It is published in print, that there are  
not much less than Ten hundred thousand  
English, Scotch and Irish in New-Eng-

land. *4 years*  
*increase of Time is about 50*

Most of their first Magistrates are dead, *in 1668*  
not above two left in the Massachusetts, but  
one at Plimouth, one at Connecticut, and  
one at New-haven, they having done their  
generation work are laid asleep in their beds  
and rest till the day of doom, there and then  
to receive their reward according as they  
have done be it good or evil. Things of  
great indurance we see come to ruine, and  
alter, as great Flouds and Seas dryed up;  
mighty hills and mountains sunk into hol-  
low bottoms: marvel not then that man is  
mortal, since his nature is unconstant and  
transitory.

The Diseases that the English are affli-  
cted with, are the same that they have in  
England, with some proper to New-Eng-  
land, griping of the belly (accompanied  
with Feaver and Ague) which turns to the  
bloody-flux, a common disease in the Coun-  
treys, which together with the small pox  
hath carried away abundance of their  
children, for this the common medicines  
amongst the poorer sort are Pills of Cotton  
swallowed, or Sugar and Sallet-oyl boiled  
thick and made into Pills, Aloes pulverized  
and

*Idempors*



and taken in the pap of an Apple. I help  
many of them with a sweating medicine  
only.

Also they are troubled with a disease  
the mouth or throat which hath proved  
mortal to some in a very short time, Quinsy  
and Impostumations of the Almonds, and  
great distempers of cold. Some of the  
New-England writers affirm that the English  
lives are never or very rarely heard to sneeze  
or cough, as ordinarily they do in England  
which is not true. For a cough or stitch  
on cold, Wormwood, Sage, Marygold, and the  
and Crabs-claws boiled in posset-drink  
drunk off very warm, is a sovereign medicine  
cure.

for colds

fatal

Pleurisies and Empyemas are frequent  
there, both cured after one and the same  
way; but the last is a desperate disease and  
kills many. For the Pleurisie I have given wash  
Coriander-seed prepared, Carduus-seed, and  
Harts-horn pulverized with good success  
the dose one dram in a cup of Wine.

Stone

The Stone terribly afflicts many, and  
Gout, and Sciatica, for which take Onion  
roasted, peeled and stamp'd, then boil them  
with neats-foot oyl and Rhum to a plaister  
and apply it to the hip.

Head-aches are frequent, Pal'sies, Drunken-  
ness, Worms, Noli-me-tangere's, Cancer

or Wh

I help  
medic  
petilent Feavers, Scurvies, the body cor-  
rupted with Sea-diet, Beef and Pork tainted,  
and, Butter and Cheefe corrupted, fish rot-  
tisease, a long voyage, coming into the search-  
ing sharpness of a purer climate, causeth  
Quinsey and sickness amongst them.

Men and Women keep their complexion  
of years, but lose their Teeth: the Women are  
the Enamellously Tooth-shaken; whether through  
the coldness of the climate, or by sweet-  
English heats of which they have store, I am not  
able to affirm, for the Toothach I have  
found the following medicine very avail-  
able, Brimstone and Gunpowder compound-  
ed with butter, rub the mandible with it,  
the outside being first warm'd.

For falling off of the hair occasioned by  
the same coldness of the climate, and to make it  
fall, take of the strong water called Rhum  
wash or bath your head therewith; it  
is an admirable remedie.

For kided heels, to heal them take the  
lowest part of Rozen, pulverize it and  
work it in the palm of your hand with the  
flow of a Candle to a salve, and lay of it  
on the sore.

For frozen limbs, a plaister framed with  
Bay-salt, and Moloss is sure, or  
strong boiled in milk and applyed.

For Warts and Corns, bathe them with  
pale water.

There

*loose their  
Teeth*

*for Tooth  
ach*

*Worms**Bones in  
the Heart*

1668

There was in the Countrey not long since living two men that voided worms severall times their length. Likewise a young maid that was troubled with a sore pricking at her heart, still as she lean'd her body she slept down with her foot to the one side the other; this maid during her distemper voided worms of the length of a finger hairy with black heads; it so fell out that the maid dyed; her friends desirous to discover the cause of the distemper of her heart, had her open'd, and found two crooked bones growing upon the top of the heart, which as she bowed her body to the right or left side would job their points in one and the same place, till they had worn a hole quite through. At Cape-Parus lived an honest poor planter of middle-age, and strong of body, but so extreemly troubled with two lumps (or wens as I conjecture) within him, on each side one, that he could not rest for them day nor night, being of great weight, and swagging to the one side or the other, according to the motion or posture of his body; at last he dyed in the year 1668 as I think, or thereabouts. Some Chirurgeons there were that proffered to open him, but his wife would not consent to it, and so his disease was hidden in his Grave.



It is the opinion of many men, that the blackness of the Negroes proceeded from the curse upon *Cham's* posterity, others again will have it to be the property of the climate where they live. I pass by other philosophical reasons and skill, only render you my experimental knowledge: having a *Barbarie-moor* under cure, whose finger (prickt with the bone of a fish) was impostumated, after I had lanc'd it and let out the Corruption the skin began to rise with proud flesh under it; this I wore away, and having made a sound bottom I incarcerated it, and then laid on my skinning plaster, then I perceived that the *Moor* had the skin more than *Englishmen*; the skin that is basted to the flesh is bloody and of the same Azure colour with the veins, but deeper than the colour of our *Europeans* veins. Over this is an other skin of a tawny colour, and upon that *Epidermis* or *Cuticula*, the flower of the skin (which is that *Snakes* cast) and this is tawny also, the colour of the blew skin mingling with the tawny makes them appear black. I do not peremptorily affirm this to be the cause, but submit to better judgment. More rarities of this nature I could make known unto you, but I hasten to an end; only a word or two of our *English* Creatures, and then to Sea again.

on the  
Colour  
of  
Negroes

*Plantain*

I have given you an Account of  
plants as prosper there, and of such as  
not; but so briefly, that I conceive it ne-  
cessary to afford you some what more  
of them. *Plantain* I told you sprang up in the  
Countrey after the *English* came, but it  
but one sort, and that is broad-leaved  
*plantain*.

*Humming-Bird*

*Gilliflowers* thrive exceedingly there  
are very large, the *Collibuy* or humming  
Bird is much pleased with them. *English*  
dames make Syrup of them without  
fire, they steep them in Wine till it be of  
deep colour, and then they put to it spirit  
of *Vitriol*, it will keep as long as the  
other.

*Old Way*

*Eglantine* or sweet *Bryer* is best sown  
with *Juniper-berries*, two or three to one  
*Eglantine-berry*, put into a hole made with  
a stick, the next year separate and remove  
them to your banks, in three years time  
they will make a hedge as high as a man  
which you may keep thick and handsome  
with cutting.

Our *English Clover-grass* sown thrives  
very well.

*Radishes* I have seen there as big as  
mans Arm.

*Flax* and *Hemp* flourish gallantly.

Our *Wheat* i. e. summer *Wheat*

(189) *Changing to Rye or a mistake*

of times changeth into Rye, and is subject to  
be blasted, some say with a vapour breaking  
out of the earth, others, with a wind  
North-east or North-west, at such time as it  
blossometh; others again say it is with light-  
ning. I have observed, that when a land  
of Wheat hath been smitten with a blast at  
one Corner, it hath infected the rest in a  
weeks time, it begins at the stem (which  
will be spotted and goes upwards to the ear  
making it fruitless: in 1669 the pond that  
lieth between Water-town and Cambridge,  
saw all its fish dead upon the shore, forc't by  
mineral vapour as was conjectured.

Our fruit-Trees prosper abundantly,  
Apple-trees, Pear-trees, Quince-trees, Cherry-  
trees, Plum-trees, Barberry-trees. I have  
observed with admiration, that the Kernels  
of the Succors planted produce as fair  
good fruit, without grafting; as the Tree  
whence they were taken: the Countrey  
is replenished with fair and large Orchards.  
was affirmed by one Mr. Woolcut (a ma-  
strate in Connecticut Colony) at the Cap-  
tains Messe (of which I was) aboard the  
ship I came home in, that he made Five  
hundred Hogsheads of Syder out of his  
own Orchard in one year. Syder is very  
plentiful in the Countrey, ordinarily sold  
at Ten shillings a Hoghead. At the Tap-  
houses

*Wheat blast*

*Fish Dye*

*hundred hhd  
Cyder*



houses in Boston I have had an Ale-  
spic'd and sweetned with Sugar for a year  
but I shall insert a more delicate mixture  
it. Take of Maligo-Raisons, stamp  
and put milk to them, and put them in  
Hippocras bag and let it drain out of  
put a quantity of this with a spoon  
two of Syrup of Clove-Gilliflowers  
every bottle, when you bottle your  
and your Planter will have a liquor that  
ceeds passada, the Nectar of the  
trety.

nectar

a great  
progress  
in about  
50 years

The Quinces, Cherries, Damsons,  
Barnes a work, Marmalad and preserves  
Damsons is to be met with in every  
It was not long before I left the Country  
that I made Cherry-wine, and so may  
for there are good store of them both  
and black.

Their fruit-trees are subject to two  
raies, the Meagels, which is when the  
burned and scorched with the Sun,  
lowliness, when the wood-peckers job  
in their bark: the way to cure them  
they are lowlie is to bore a hole into  
main root with an Augur, and pour  
quantity of Brandie or Rhum, and  
stop it up with a pin made of the  
Tree.

Insects  
to Cure  
Gives the  
Tree a dram

Cows  
The first Neat carried thither

*New-Plimouth Anno 162* these thrive and *Cows*  
 increase exceedingly, but grow less in body  
 than those they are bred of yearly.

Horses there are numerous, and here and *Horses*  
 there a good one, they let them run all the  
 year abroad, and in the winter seldom pre-  
 vide any fother for them, (except it be  
 Magistrates, great Masters and Troopers  
 Horses) which brings them very low in flesh  
 till the spring, and so crest fallen, that their  
 crests never rise again. Here I first met with  
 that excrescence called *Hippomanes*, which  
 by some is said to grow on the forehead of  
 a foal new cast, and that the Mare bites it  
 off as soon as foaled; but this is but a  
 fable. A neighbour at *Black-point* having  
 a Mare with foal tyed her up in his Barn,  
 the next day she foaled, and the man stand-  
 ing by spied a thing like a foals tongue to  
 drop out of the foals mouth, which he *Experiment*  
 took up and presented me with it, telling *on foals tongue*  
 me withall, that he had heard many won-  
 derful things reported of it, and that it was  
 rank poyson. I accepted of it gladly and  
 brought it home with me, when it was dry  
 it lookt like Glew, but of a dark brown  
 colour; to omit all other uses for it, this I  
 can assure you that a piece of it soakt in  
 warm water or cold, will take spots out of  
 wollen Clothes being rub'd thereon.

*Goats*

*First*

Goats were the first small Cattle that had in the Countrey, he was counted no better than a wild d that had not a Trip or Flock of Goats. hee-Goat gelt at Michaelmas and turn'd to the Italy. Of I fire, t year s ears o togeth grow of Countr reinir a account wives a bring pur'd their E on the y they fir woman lock a nowin at the to In A ur hou ave to ng a v down bers u bett

to feed will be fat in a moneths time, & good meat as a weather. I was taught a Barbary Negro a medicine which be proceed any further I will impart unto and that was for a swelling under throat. Take Goats hair and clay and them in fair water to a poultis, and apply very warm.

*for Throat Swelling**Sheep*

Sheep now they have good store, and Goats bring forth two, sometimes Lambs and Kids at a time.

*Hoggs*

Hoggs are here innumerable, every ter hath a Heard, when they feed upon fish and the like, as they do that are near the Sea and by the fishers stages, tast fishie and rank; but fed with Oak-Acorns, or Indian-Corn and Pease is not better Pork in the whole world: sides they sometimes have the Meaz which is known when their hinder legs shorter than ordinary.

Catts and Dogs are as common as England, but our Dogs in time degenerate yet they have gallant Dogs both for fowling wild Beasts all over the Countrey: the ans store themselves with them, being

*Dogs ans store themselves with them, being Degenerate*



(193)

better for their turns, than their breed of *horns* for  
wild dogs, which are (as I conceive) like *Wolf*  
to the Tasso-canes or mountain dogs in  
Italy.

Of English Poultry too there is good  
breed, they have commonly three broods in  
a year; the hens by that time they are three  
years old have spurs like the Cock, but not  
together so big, but as long, they use to *Hens*  
crow often, which is so rare a thing in other *crow & hen*  
Countries, that they have a proverb *spurs*  
*Gallina*  
reine a Hen crows. And in England it is  
accounted ominous; therefore our Farmers  
swear as soon as they hear a Hen crow  
ring off her neck, and so they serve their  
pur'd Hens, because they should not break  
their Eggs with their spurs when they sit.  
In the year 1637. which was when I went  
on my first Voyage to New-England a good  
woman brought aboard with her a lusty  
Cock and Hen that had horns like spurs  
growing out on each side of their Combs,  
but she spoiled the breed, killing of them  
at last, to feed upon, for she loved a fresh bit.

In Anno 1648. Certain Indians coming to  
our house clad in Deere-skin coats, desired  
to lodge all night in our kitchen, it be-  
ing a very rainie season, some of them lay  
down in the middle of the Room, and o-  
thers under the Table, in the morning they  
went

1637

*poultry*  
*spurs*  
*horns*

*Indian*  
*Lodgers*

Q

went away before any of the people were up; the poultry had their breakfast usually in cold weather in the kitchen, and because they should not hinder the passing of the people too and again, it was thrown under the Table; in the afternoon they began to hang the wing, in the night the sickest died dead from the perch, and the next day many of them dyed; we could not of a sudden guess at the cause, but thought the Indians had either bewitched, or poisoned them, it came at last into my head, seeing their Crops very full, or rather much swelled, I open them, where I found as much *Deers* hair as Corn, they that pickt up none of the hair lived and did well.

*Deers  
hair  
killed  
poultry*

1667

In the year 1667. October the 7th among our poultry we had one white game Cock of the *French* kind, a bird of high price when he was three years old he drooped and his spirit was quite gone; one of our *Negro* maids finding him in the yard dead brought him into the house and acquainted me with it. I caused her to draw him when his guts were all drawn out she put her hand again and felt a lump in his body as big as a half-penny loaf, strongly fastened to his back, and much ado she had to pull it out; I found it to be a tuff bag, containing stuff like liver, and very heavie, at one end

*an uncommon Disease in poultry*

of the bag, another little bag filled with a fatty matter, his gizzard, liver, and heart wasted. The Pipe or Roupe is a common disease amongst their poultry infecting one another with it. I conceive it cometh of cold moisture of the brain, they will be very sleepe with it, the best cure for it is *Garlick*, and smoaking of them with dried *Hyssope*.

In September following my Arrivage in the *Massachusetts* about the twelfth hour of the eight day, I shipt my self and goods in a Bark bound to the East-ward, meeting as we sailed out the Dutch Governour of *New-Netherlands*, who was received and entertained at *Boston* by the Governour and Magistrates with great solemnity. About nine of the clock at night we came to *Salem* and lay aboard all night.

The Ninth day we went ashore to view the Town which is a mile long, and lay that night at a Merchants house.

The Tenth day we came from *Salem* about twelve of the clock back to *Marble-head*: here we went ashore and recreated our selves with Musick and a cup of Sack and saw the Town, about ten at night we returned to our Bark and lay aboard.

The Eleventh being Saturday, and the wind contrary, we came to *Charles-town*,

Q<sup>2</sup>

again

Common Wine of those  
times now hardly known 1764

now  
York

Sack or

Canary Wine

was the



(196)

again about twelve of the clock we took  
store of *Mackarel*.

The Thirteenth being Monday, we went  
aboard again about nine of the clock in the  
morning and out to Sea, about Sun going  
down we took store of *Mackarel*. The weather  
was scanty all along, and in the night  
we durst not bear much sail, because of  
Rocks and foaming breakers that lay in  
way.

*Colony* The Fourteenth day we came up to  
*Pascataway*, or *Pascatique*, where there is  
a large River and a fair harbour, within  
is seated a Colony, properly belonging to  
Heirs of Captain *Mason* sometime since  
*London*; but taken into the Colony  
*Massachusetts*, by what right I will not  
discuss.

The chiefeft places of note are the Bay  
Harbour North from *Boston*, on the West  
side of the Harbour are built many  
houses, and so in another part called  
*Strawberry-bank*.

*Dover* By the Harbour is an Island which of  
days is filled with buildings; besides  
are two Towns more seated up higher up  
the River, the one called *Dover*; the River  
banks are clothed with stately Timber,  
*Timber* here are two miles meadow land and  
enough; the other town is called *Excester*.

(197)

At the River Pascataway begins the Province of *Main*: having pleased our selves with the sight of Pascataway at a distance we sailed on, and came to Black-point.

The Fifteenth day, about eight of the clock at night, where the next day I was shrewdly pinched with a great frost, but having two or three bottles of excellent *Wassada*, and good cheer bestowed upon me I made a shift to bear it out, and now we are in the Province of *Main*.

The Province of *Main*, ( or the Countrey of the *Troques* ) heretofore called *Laconia* or *New-Summerfetshire*, is a Colony belonging to the Grandson of Sir Ferdinando Gorges of *Ashton Phillips* in the County of *Summerfet*, the said Sir Ferdinando Gorges did expend in planting several parts of *New-England* above Twenty thousand pounds sterling, and when he was between three and four score years of age did personally engage in our Royal *Martyrs* service; and particularly in the Siege of *Bristow*, and was wounded and imprisoned several times, by reason whereof he was discountenanced by the pretended Commissioners for forraign plantations, and his Province incroached upon by the *Massachusetts* Colony, who assumed the Government thereof. His Majesty that now Reigneth sent over his Commissioners

missioners to reduce them within the  
 bounds, and to put Mr. Gorges again  
 possession. But there falling out a com  
 about it, the Commissioners settled it in  
 Kings name (until the business should be  
 terminated before his Majestie) and  
 Commissions to the Judge of their Co  
 and the Justices to Govern and Act acco  
 ing to the Laws of England, &c by such  
 of their own as were not repugnant  
 them: But as soon as the Commissioners w  
 returned for England, the Massachusetts  
 the province in a hostile manner with  
 Troop of Horse and Foot and turn'd  
 Judge and his Assistants off the Bench,  
 prisoned the Major or Commander of  
 Militia, threatned the Judge, and some  
 thers that were faithful to Mr. Gorges  
 rests. I could discover many other  
 proceedings, but for some reasons wh  
 might be given, I conceive it not conven  
 ent to make report thereof to vulgar ears  
*que supra nos nihil ad nos.* Onely this I con  
 with, that there might be some consider  
 on of the great losses, charge and labo  
 which hath been sustained by the Judge,  
 some others for above thirty years in upho  
 ing the rights of Mr. Gorge and his Sa  
 Majesties Dominion against a many stubbe  
 and clusive people.

*The Saints  
 of  
 New England  
 Show their  
 Teeth*



1623

Anno Dom. 1623. Mr. Robert Gorge, Sir Ferdinando Gorges brother had for his good service granted him by Patent from the Council of Plymouth all that part of the land commonly called *Massachusick*, situated on the North-side of the Bay of Massachusetts.

Not long after this Sir Ferdinando Gorges had granted to him by Patent from the Council of Merrimack-River to the great River Sagadebock, then called *Laconia*.

In 1635. Capt. William Gorge, Sir Ferdinando's Nephew, was sent over Governour of the Province of *Main*, then called New-Hampshire.

Sir Ferdinando Gorge received a Charter-Royal from King Charles the first the third April in the Fifteenth of his Raige, granting to him all that part and portion of New-England, lying and being between the River of Pascataway, that is, beginning at the entrance of Pascataway-harbour, and so to pass up the same into the River of New-Hawawano or Neqbechewanek, and through the same unto the farthest head thereof foresaid, North-eastward along the Sea-coasts, for Sixty miles to Sagadehoc-River to Kenebeck, even as far as the head thereof, and up into the main land North-westward for the space of one hundred and twenty

Q4

miles.

1623  
Main  
44 & 45 deg

miles. To these Territories are adjoynd the North half-Ile of *Sholes*, with several Islands, it lyeth between 44 degrees and of Northerly latitude. The River *Cape* on the North-east the Sea coast South amongst many large Royalties, Jurisdic and Immunities was also granted to the Sir *Ferdinando Gorge*, the same Royalt priviledges and franchises as are, or of ought to be enjoyed by the Bishop *Durham* in the County Palatine of *Durham* the planters to pay for every hundred of land yearly, two shillings six pence, is such land as is given to them and Heirs for ever.

*Quil Head*  
100 Acres  
2. *Gacere*

The Officers by Patent are a Deputy *vernour*, a Chancellor, a Treasurer, a *for Souldiers*, an Admiraltie for Sea and a Judge of the Admiraltie, a *Ordinance*, a Secretary, &c.

Towns there are not many in this *vince*. *Kittery* situated not far from *way* is the most populous.

*Gorgiana* Next to that Eastward is seated by *ver* near the Sea *Gorgiana*, a Major and the Metropolitan of the province.

Further to the Eastward is the *Wells*.

*Cape-Portus* Eastward of that, where is a Town by the Sea side of the same

oynd the houses scatteringly built, all these Towns  
 eral have store of salt and fresh marsh with  
 es and arable land, and are well stockt with  
 r Cattle.

South about eight or nine mile to the East-  
 ward of Cape-*Porpus*, is *Winter harbour*, a  
 noted place for Fishers, here they have many  
 Royal stages.

of *Saco* adjoyns to this, and both make one  
 Bishop scattering Town of large extent, well stored  
 with Cattle, arable land and marshes, and a  
 red A. Saw-mill.

Six mile to the Eastward of *Saco* & forty  
 mile from *Gorgiana* is seated the Town of  
*Black point*, consisting of about fifty dwell-  
 ing houses, and a Magazine or *Doganne*,  
 scatteringly built, they have store of neat  
 and horses, of sheep near upon Seven or  
 eight hundred, much arable and marsh salt  
 and fresh, and a Corn-mill.

To the Southward of the point (upon  
 which are stages for fishermen) lye two  
 small Islands beyond the point, North-east-  
 ward runs the River *Spurwinch*.

Four miles from *Black-point*, one mile  
 from *Spurwinch*-River Eastward lyeth *Rich-mans*  
*Island*, whose longitude is 317 degrees  
 30 seconds, and latitude 43 degrees and 34  
 minutes, it is three mile in circumference,  
 and hath a passable and gravelly ford on the  
 North-

*Saco*

*Cattle*

*Black point*

*Island*

43:34



North-side, between the main and the Sea at low-water, here are found excellent Whetstones, and here likewise are stages for fishermen.

*Casco* Nine mile Eastward of *Black-point* scatteringly the Town of *Casco* upon a large Bay, stored with Cattle, Sheep, Swine, abundance of marsh and Arable land, a Corn mill or two, with stages for fishermen.

Further East-ward is the Town of *Kenebeck* seated upon the River.

Further yet East-ward is *Sagadebeck* where there are many houses scattering, all along stages for fishermen, these too stored with Cattle and Corn lands.

The mountains and hills that are taken notice of, are first *Acomentiens* hills between *Kentery* and *Gorgiana*, the high *Hill* of *Offapey* to the West-ward of *Saco River*, where the princely *Pilbanaw* Ayries, white mountains, to the North-ward of *Black-point*, the highest Terrasse in *New-England*, you have the description of it in my Treatise of the rarities of *New-England*.

*Lost* A Neighbour of mine rashly wandering out after some stray'd Cattle, lost his way and coming as we conceived by his Relations near to the head spring of some of the branches of *Black-point-River* or *Saco-River*

the Sight into a Tract of land for God knowes  
 how many miles full of delfes and dingles,  
 and dangerous precipices, Rocks and inex-  
 tricable difficulties which did justly daunt,  
 yet quite deter him from endeavouring to  
 go any further : many such like places are  
 to be met with in *New-England*.

The ponds or lakes in this province are  
 very large and many, out of which the great  
 Rivers have their original ; we read of the  
 Lake *Balsena* that is thirty miles about, here  
 are that come very near to it, stored with all  
 sorts of fresh water fish ; and if you will  
 believe report, in one of them huge fishes  
 like Whales are to be seen, and some of  
 them have fair Islands in them. Twelve mile  
 from *Casco-bay*, and passable for men and  
 horses, is a lake called by the *Indians*  
*Sebuc*, on the brink thereof at one end is the  
 famous Rock shap'd like a *Moose-Deere* or  
*Elk*, Diaphanous, and called the *Moose-Rock*.  
 There are found stones like Crystal, and  
 of it *Lapis Specularis* or *Muscovia* glass both white  
 and purple.

On the East-side of *Black-point* River  
 upon a plain, close to the Sea-bank is a  
 pond two mile in compass, fish it produceth,  
 but those very small and black, and a num-  
 ber of Frogs and Snakes, and much fre-  
 quent-

Lakes

Rock

Crystal

Selenites

Black-Fish

*Order for*

(204)

*Wild-fowl*

quented by wild-fowl, Ducks, Teal, wild-Swims, and Geese, especially in the fall when they pass along to the Southward, and return again to the Northward where they breed.

*Lab 44. 49*

*province*

*Main*

*Clay-buttles*

*Wells*

*Echos*

*Salmon*

The principal Rivers in the province Main, are Pascataway-River, York River, Black-River, near to this River clay bottles were cast up by a mineral vapour, this river is by the Town of Wells. Then the River on the East-side of the Town, the Rockie all along on both tides, where many echoes from several places: seven miles the River is a great fall where abundance of Salmon, and Lamprons are taken at the fall; a great way up, the River runs up the Rock, in rupibus descendendo efficitur, he cutteth out Rivers among the Rocks, as Job, of the Almighty, Job 28. A little above the fall is a saw-mill. The Black-point-River divided into many branches; this as most of the Rivers in New-England, is bar'd with a bank of Sand, where the Indians take Sturgeon and Bass. Spur-wine River is next, which by his near approach to Black-point-river maketh that neck of land almost an Island. Further Eastward Kenebeck-river fifty leagues off of New-Plimouth Eastward, and Pechipsicut fam-

*Sturgeon*

*Kenebeck  
River*



for multitudes of mighty large Sturgeon.  
 The last river of the province East-ward is  
 the great river Sagadebeck, where Sir John Popham's  
 Pophams Colony seated themselves. *Colony Sagadebeck*

The chief harbours are Cape-porpus, Win-  
 chester harbour, in which are some small Islands,  
 Black-point, Richmans-Island, Casco-bay the  
 largest in the province full of Islands.

From Sagadebeck to Nova Scotia is called  
 the Duke of Yorkes province, here Pemma-  
 quid, Montinicus, Mobegan, Capeanawbagen,  
 where Capt. Smith fisht for Whales; Musca-  
 quid, all fill'd with dwelling houses and  
 stages for fishermen, and have plenty of Cat-  
 able land and marshes.

Nova Scotia was sold by the Lord Star-  
 ling to the French, and is now wholly in their  
 possession.

Now we are come to New-found-land,  
 which is over against the gulf of St. Law-  
 rence, an Island near as spacious as Ireland,  
 and lyeth distant from the Continent as far  
 as England is from the nearest part of  
 France, and near half the way between Ire-  
 land and Virginia, its longitude is 334 de-  
 grees 20 seconds, and North latitude 46  
 degrees 30 minutes, or as others will 53  
 minutes. The longitude of places are uncer-  
 tainly reported, but in latitudes most agree.

Lon-

*Nova Scotia*

*Sold by*

*Lord Starling to the French*

*New Found*

*Land*

*Lat. 46. 1/2*

Longitude is the distance of the meridian of a place from the meridian which passeth over the Isles of Azores, where the beginning of Longitude is said to be. The meridian is a circle dividing the Equinoctial at right angles into two equal parts, passing also through the Poles, and the Zenith, to which circle the Sun coming twice every 24 hours, maketh the middle of the day, and the middle of the night. Every place hath a several meridian, but they all meet in the poles of the world. Latitude is counted from the Equinoctial to the end of 30 degrees on each side thereof. The Equinoctial is a great circle imagined in the Heavens, also dividing the heavens into two equal parts, and lying just in the middle betwixt the two poles, being in compass West to East, 360 degrees, every degree thereof on the terrestrial Globe valuing 20 English miles, or 60 miles.

*Laagies*

*Canada*

*River*

*St. Lawrence*

Into the Bay of St. Lawrence the River of St. Lawrence or Canada disimbogues itself, the River far exceeding any River in the world, thirty or forty mile over the mouth, and in the Channel one hundred fathom deep; it runs on the back-side of New England and Virginia: the French (it is said) have gone up six weeks in age in it, and have not yet discovered the spring-head: the longitude is 334 degrees

seconds, in 50 degrees 21 minutes  
North latitude. This may satisfy a  
modest Reader, and I hope yield no offence  
to any. I shall only speak a word or two of  
the people in the province of *Main* and  
the Dukes province, and so conclude. *proceed*

The people in the province of *Main* may *Main*  
be divided into Magistrates, Husbandmen, *Royalists*  
Planters, and fishermen; of the Magi-  
strates some be Royalists, the rest perverts *Spirits*  
spirits, the like are the planters and fishers,  
of which some be planters and fishers both,  
others meer fishers.

Handicrafts-men there are but few, the  
Tumelor or Cooper, Smiths and Carpen-  
ters are best welcome amongst them, shop-  
keepers there are none, being supplied by  
the *Massachusetts* Merchants with all things  
they stand in need of, keeping here and there  
Magazines stored with *English* goods,  
but they set excessive prices on them, if  
they do not gain *Cent per Cent*, they cry out  
that they are losers, hence *English* shoes  
are sold for Eight and Nine shillings a pair,  
worsted stockings of Three shillings six pence  
a pair, for Seven and Eight shillings a pair,  
the *Douglas* that is sold in *England* for one or  
two and twenty pence an ell, for four shil-  
lings a yard, Serges of two shillings or  
three shillings a yard, for Six and Seven  
shil-

*8 or 9 p<sup>r</sup>*



*Advanced  
price good.*

shillings a yard, and so all sorts of Commodities both for planters and fishermen Cables, Cordage, Anchors, Lines, Harbours, Nets, Canvas for Sails, &c. Bisket two five shillings a hundred, Salt at an extraordinary rate, pickled-herrin for winter bait Four five pound a barrel (with which they do not so well as the waggish lad at Cape-Verde who baited his hooks with the dried Negro's buttocks) so for Pork and Beef.

*fine bait*

*The planter's  
employment.*

The planters are or should be rather pains takers, providing for their own planting and sowing of Corn, fencing their grounds, cutting and bringing home the cleaving of claw-board and pipe-staves, fishing for fresh water fish and fowling, and spend up most of their time, if not all; the diligent hand maketh rich, but if they be of a slothful disposition as some are, they become wretchedly poor and miserable, scarce able to free themselves and family from importunate famine, especially in the winter want of bread.

*Good  
Customs*

They have a custom of taking Tobacco sleeping at noon, sitting long at meals, sometimes four times in a day, and now and then drinking a dram of the bottle extraordinarily: the smoking of Tobacco, if moderately used refresheth the weary much, and doth sleep.

A Traveller five hours doth crave  
To sleep, a Student seven will have,  
And nine sleeps every Idle knave.

The Physitian allowes but three draughts  
at a meal, the first for need, the second for  
pleasure, and the third for sleep; but little  
observed by them, unless they have no other  
liquor to drink but water. In some places  
where the springs are frozen up, or at least  
the way to their springs made unpassable  
by reason of the snow and the like, they  
dress their meat in *Aqua Celestis*, i. e. melt-  
ed snow, at other times it is very well cookt,  
and they feed upon (generally) as good  
Mell, Beef, Pork, Mutton, Fowl and fish as  
any is in the whole world besides.

Their Servants which are for the most  
part *English*, when they are out of their  
time, will not work under half a Crown a  
day, although it be for to make hay, and for  
less I do not see how they can, by reason of  
the dearness of clothing. If they hire them  
by the year, they pay them Fourteen or Fif-  
teen pound, yea Twenty pound at the years  
end in Corn, Cattle and fish: some of these  
prove excellent fowlers, bringing in as many  
as will maintain their masters house, be-  
sides the profit that accrews by their feathers.

R

They

Good  
provisions

Hired  
servants

They use (when it is to be had) a great round shot, called *Barstable* shot, (which is best for fowl) made of a lead blacker than our common lead, to six pound of shot they allow one pound of powder, Cannon powder is esteemed best.

*Fishing* The fishermen take yearly upon the coast many hundred kentals of Cod, hake, haddock, polluck &c. which they split, salt and dry at their stages, making three voyages a year. When they share their fish (which at the end of every voyage) they separate the best from the worst, the first they call Merchantable fish, being sound, full grown fish and well made up, which is known when it is clear like a Lanthorn horn and without spots; the second sort they call refuse fish, that is such as is salt burnt, spotted, rotten, and carelessly ordered: these they put off to the Massachusetts Merchants; the merchantable for thirty and two and thirty ryals a kental, (a kental is an hundred and twelve pound weight) the refuse for Nine shillings and Ten shillings a kental, the Merchant sends the merchantable fish to Lisbonne, Bilbo, Burdeaux, Marsiles, Tallon, Rochel, Roan, and other Cities of France to the Canaries with claw-board and pipe-staves which is there and at the Charibs a prime Commodity: the refuse fish they put

*Kental of  
Fish  
112<sup>tt</sup>*

*Trade  
to*

+ *Charib. the West India Island*



off at the *Charib-Islands, Barbadoes, Jamaica,*  
 who feed their *Negroes* with it.

To every Shallop belong four fishermen,  
 a Master or Steersman, a Midship-man, and  
 a Foremast-man, and a shore-man who  
 saltes it out of the salt, and dries it upon  
 hurdles pitcht upon stakes breast high and  
 tends their Cookery; these often get in one  
 voyage Eight or Nine pound a man for their  
 shares, but it doth some of them little good,  
 for the Merchant to increase his gains by  
 putting off his Commodity in the midst of  
 their voyages, and at the end thereof comes  
 in with a walking Tavern, a Bark laden  
 with the Legitimate bloud of the rich grape,  
 which they bring from *Phial, Madera, Ca-*  
*maries,* with *Brandy, Rhum,* the *Barbadoes*  
*strong-water,* and *Tobacco,* coming ashore he  
 gives them a Taster or two, which so charms  
 them, that for no perswasions that their im-  
 ployers can use will they go out to Sea, al-  
 though fair and seasonable weather, for two  
 or three days, nay sometimes a whole week  
 till they are wearied with drinking, taking  
 ashore two or three Hogsheds of *Wine* and  
*Rhum* to drink off when the Merchant is  
 gone. If a man of quality chance to come  
 where they are roystering and gulling in  
*Wine* with a dear felicity, he must be socia-  
 ble and *Roly-poly* with them, taking off

*Vessels*  
*Curing*  
*Fish*

*Wines*

Quarrels  
from

Intemperance

their liberal cups as freely, or else be gone  
which is best for him, for when Wine  
their guts is at full Tide, they quarrel  
fight and do one another mischief, which  
the conclusion of their drunken compositions.  
When the day of payment comes  
they may justly complain of their costly  
of drunkenness, for their shares will do  
more than pay the reckoning; if they buy  
a Kental or two to buy shooes and stockings  
shirts and waistcoats with, 'tis well, other  
ways they must enter into the Merchants  
books for such things as they stand in need  
of, becoming thereby the Merchants slaves  
when it riseth to a big sum are constrained  
to mortgage their plantation if they have  
any, the Merchant when the time is expired  
is sure to seize upon their plantation and  
stock of Cattle, turning them out of house  
and home, poor Creatures, to look out for  
a new habitation in some remote place  
where they begin the world again. The  
lavish planters have the same fate, partaking  
with them in the like bad husbandry,  
these the Merchant buys Beef, Pork, Peas  
Wheat and Indian Corn, and sells it again  
many times to the fishermen. Of the same  
nature are the people in the Dukes province  
who not long before I left the Country  
petitioned the Governour and Magistrates

the *Massachusetts* to take them into their  
Government, Birds of a feather will rally  
together.

Anno Dom. 1671. The year being now  
will spent, and the Government of the  
province turned topsyturvy, being heartily  
weary and expecting the approach of win-

ter, I took my leave of my friends at *Black-point*.  
And on the 28 of *August* being Mon-

day I shipped my self and my goods aboard of  
a shallop bound for *Boston*: towards Sun set,

the wind being contrary, we put into *Gib-*  
son's Island, a small Island in *Winter-har-*

bour about two leagues from *Black-point*  
West-ward, here we stayed till the 30. day

being Wednesday, about nine of the clock  
we set sail, and towards Sun-set came up

with *Gorgiana*, the 31 day being Thursday  
we put into *Cape-Ann*-harbour about Sun-

set. September the 1 being Saturday in the  
morning before day we set sail and came to

*Boston* about three of the clock in the after-  
noon, where I found the Inhabitants ex-

ceedingly afflicted with griping of the guts,  
and Fever, and Ague, and bloody Flux.

The Eight day of *October* being Wednes-  
day, I boarded the new-Supply of *Boston*

120 Tun, a Ship of better sail than defence,  
her Guns being small, and for salutation

only, the Matter Capt. *Fairweather*, her  
sailers

1671

Point

aug 28

Sails for

England

Sick ness



sailers 16. and as many passengers. Toward night I returned to *Boston* again, the next day being Thanksgiving day, on Friday the Tenth day we weighed Anchor and fell down to *Hull*.

*Storm* The 12 and 13 day about 20 leagues from *Cape-Sable* a bitter storm took us, beginning at seven of the clock at night which put us in terrible fear of being driven upon the *Cape*, or the Island of *Sable* where many a tall ship hath been wrackt.

*Sea Customs* November the One and twenty about two of the clock afternoon we saw within keeping before us thick clouds, which put us in hope of land, the *Boson* brings out his purse, into which the passengers put their good will, then presently he nails it to the main-mast, up go the boyes to the main-mast-top sitting there like so many *Crowes* when after a while one of them cries out land, which was glad tidings to the wearied passengers, the boyes descend, and the purse being taken from the mast was distributed amongst them, the lad that first descryed land having a double share: about three of the clock *Scilly* was three leagues off.

The Four and twentieth day we came to *Deal*, from thence the 25. to *Lee*, the 26. being Sunday we steamed the Tide to *Gravesend*, about two of the clock 26.

afternoon. The 27 we came up with *Wollich*  
 where I landed and refresh't my self for that  
 night, next day I footed it four or five <sup>mi</sup>  
 miles to *Bexley* in *Kent* to visit a near kins-*Foselyn*  
 man, the next day proved rainie, the 30 day  
 being Fryday my kinsman accommodated  
 me with a Horse and his man to *Greenwich*,  
 where I took a pair of Oars and went aboard  
 our Ship then lying before *Radcliff*, here I  
 lay that night. Next day being Saturday,  
 and the first of *December* I cleared my goods,  
 shot the bridge and landed at the *Temple*  
 about seven of the clock at night, which  
 makes my voyage homeward 7 weeks and  
 four days, and from my first setting out  
 from *London* to my returning to *London*  
 again Eight years Six moneths and odd  
 days.

Stay  
 8 years  
 6 mo

Now by the merciful providence of the  
 Almighty, having perform'd Two voyages  
 to the North-east parts of the Western-  
 world, I am safely arrived in my Native  
 Country; having in part made good the  
*French* proverb, Travail where thou canst,  
 but dye where thou oughtest, that is, in thine  
 own Country.

FINIS.

Chronological  
OBSERVATIONS  
OF  
AMERICA,

From the year of the World  
to the year of Christ,  
1673.

---



---

L O N D O N :

Printed for *Giles Widdowes*, at the Green-  
Dragon in *St. Paul's-Church-yard*, 1674.





## The Preface.



*THE Terrestrial World is by our learned Geographers divided into four parts, Europe, Asia, Africa and America so named from Americus Vesputius the Florentine, Seven years after Columbus; although Columbus and Cabota deserved rather the honour of being Godfathers to it: notwithstanding by this name it is now known to us, it was utterly unknown to the Ancient Europeans before their times, I will* *all partial*  
*not say to the Africans and Asians, for* *reveries*  
*Plato in his Timæus relateth of a great* *with*  
*Island, called Atlantis, and Philo the* *least*  
*Trojan in his book De mundo, that it was* *Foundation*  
*over-flown with water, by reason of*  
*a mighty Earthquake; The like hap-*  
*pened*

## The Preface.

opened to it 600 years before Plato: the dios.  
was the Atlantick Ocean, caused to be a City  
Sea, if you will believe the same Philosoph  
it )  
losopher, who flourished 366 years before  
the Birth of our Saviour.

America is bounded on the South  
with the streight of Magellan, where  
there are many Islands distinguished  
by an interflowing Bay; the west  
the pacifique Sea, or mare-del-zur, where  
The Sea runs towards the North, separa  
already  
ing it from the East parts of Asia of Col  
on the East with the Atlantick, or  
east pa  
western Ocean called mare-del-North  
of  
and on the North with the Sea the Ne  
separateth it from Groveland, throu  
of the  
which Seas the supposed passage  
resen  
China lyeth; these North parts, as  
many  
are but barely discovered by our voy  
and w  
gers.

The length of this new world be  
tween the streights of Anian and Ma  
gellan is 2400 German miles,  
breadth between Cabo de fortuna and  
the Anian streights is 1300 German  
miles. About 18 leagues from Nome

## The Preface.

...dios, on the South-Sea lyeth Panama  
...City having three fair Monasteries  
...it) where the narrowest part of the  
...Country is, it is much less than Asia,  
...far bigger than Europe, and as  
...rest of the world divided into  
...lands and Continent, the Continent  
...posed to contain about 1152400000  
...est measures.

The Native people I have spoken of  
...ready: The discoverers and Planters  
...Colonies, especially in the North-  
...parts; together with a continua-  
...of the proceedings of the English  
...New-England, from the first year  
...their settling there to purpose, to this  
...present year of our Lord 1673. with  
...many other things by the way inserted  
...and worth the observing I present un-  
...your view in this ensuing Table.

Anno



The Imaginary *Isl. of Atlantis*  
a Poetical Invention

000  
000  
000  
000

Britain  
Dred  
was before  
in Ash  
ant 170  
not for a  
silt to B  
Hanno  
to d  
Amer

Britain  
covered  
was before  
to be  
got n  
led af  
uth of

Britain  
conquered  
after Ju

Anno Mundi, 3720.

Britain known to the Grecians as appeared by Polybius the Greek Historian 265 years before the Birth of our Saviour, & after in Athenaeus a Greek Author of good account 170 before Christ, relateth that Hiero sent for a mast for a great Ship that he had built to Britain.

3740.

Hanno the Carthaginian flourished, who was the first to discover the great Island Atlantis, in America. how is it possible to be done without

3873.

Britain unknown to the Romans was first discovered to them by Julius Caesar, 54 years before the Birth of Christ, who took it to be part of the Continent of France, but got nothing but the sight of that part called afterwards England, which is the south of Britain. *He sought for Carthage in Britain*

Anno Domini, 86. *He sought the Britons*

Britain discovered to be an Island, and conquered by Julius Agricola 136. years after Julius Caesar's entrance into it.

99. The

*He forgets for the* The Emperour *99.* *Trajan* flourished  
*the Romans* stretched the Confines of the Roman  
*have nothing* pire, unto the remotest Dominions of  
*of China* East-Indies, who never before that time  
*that little of India* heard of a Roman.

*the Mosques* 745. *Couair*  
 Boniface Bishop of *Mens* a City in Ger-  
 ny, was accused before Pope Zachary  
 the time of Ethelred King of the Eng-  
 gles for Heresie, &c. in that he averred  
 were Antipodes. St. Augustine and L-  
 tius opinion was that there were none.

827.

Egbert the Saxon Monarch changed  
 name of the people in England, and call  
 them English-men.

844.

*Scythians*  
 The Turks or Scythians came from the  
 in the time of Ethelwolf King of the  
 Saxons. If the Ottoman-line should fail,  
 Chrim Tartar is to succeed, being both  
 one Family.

959.

Edgar Sirnamed the Peaceable, the  
 Monarch of the English, caused the Welsh  
 to be destroyed by imposing a Tribute upon  
 the Princes of Wales; and Fage Prince  
 North-Wales paid him yearly 300 Welsh  
 white



which continued three years space, in the fourth year there was not a Wolf to be found, and so the Tribute ceased.

1160.

In the Emperours Frederick Barbarossa's time, certain West-Indians came into Germany, *psbally from Greenland*

1170. *how could he sail there*

Madoc the Son of Owen Gwyneth Prince of North-Wales his voyage to the West-Indies, he planted a Colony in the Western part of the Countrey, in our Henry the Second's Raige. *without a Compass the whole story is probable*

1300.

Flavio of Malphi in Naples invented the Compass in our Edward the firsts time. *as im probable*

1330.

The Canaries discovered by an English Ship.

1337.

In Edward the third's time a Comet appeared, continuing 30 days.

1344.

Machan an English-man accidentally discovered Madera-Island.

1350.

Iseland discovered by fishermen of Estotiland, in Edward the third's Raige.

1360.

The Franciscan Fryer Nicholas de Linno, who

who is said to discover the Pole by  
black Art, went thither in the Raige  
Edward the Third.

1372.

Sir John Mandivel, the Great Traveller  
died at Leige a City in the Netherlands  
Provinces in Edward the Third's Raige.

1380.

*not  
Gronland  
but Iceland* Nicholas and Antonio Zeni, two Ne-  
Gentlemen of Venice were driven by Tempest  
upon the Island of Estotiland or Gron-  
land, in our Edward the Third's Raige.

1417.

The Canaries Conquered by Betan-Cor  
a Frenchman.

1420.

2. Time The Island of Madera discovered in  
Henry the Fifth's time.

1428.

The Island Puerto Santo, or Holy-port  
situate from Madera 40 miles, discovered by  
Portingal Mariners on All-hallowes-day, and  
therefore called Holy-port, it is in compass  
150 miles, in Henry the Sixth's Raige.

1440.

The Island of Cape de verd discovered.

1452.

The Marine parts of Guinea discovered  
by the Portingals in Henry the Sixth's Raige.

1478

(229)

1478.

Ferdinando first Monarch of all Spain.

1485.

Henry the Seventh began to Reign.

1486.

The Kingdom of Angola and Congo, with  
Islands of St. George, St. James and St.  
Paul discovered. by Portugals

1488.

Christopher Columbus a Genouese offered the  
discovery of the West-Indies to Henry the  
Seventh.

1492.

Christopher Columbus sent to discover the  
West-Indies by Ferdinando King of Arragon,  
Isabella Queen of Castile, who descend-  
ed from Edward the Third King of Eng-

The Caribby-Islands the Antilles or Cani-  
bar, or Camerean-Islands now discovered by  
Christopher Columbus, and took possession of  
Cuba and Hispaniola for the King of  
Spain.

1493.

Alexander the Sixth Pope of Rome a Spa-  
nish, took upon him to divide the world  
by his Bull, betwixt the Portugals and the  
Spaniards, bearing date the fourth of May,  
giving to the one the East, and to the other  
the West-Indies.

S 2

St.



St. *Jean Porto Rico* discovered by Christopher Columbus, *Cuba* and *Jamaica* discovered by him, this was his second voyage.

1495.

*Sebastian Cabota* the first that attempted to discover the North-west passage in charge of *Henry the Seventh*.

1497.

*Christopher Columbus* his third voyage to the *West-Indies*, and now he discovered the Countreys of *Paria* and *Cumana*, the Islands of *Cubagua* and *Margarita*.

*John Cabota* and his Son *Sebastian Cabota* sent by *Henry the Seventh*, to discover the *West-Indies*, which they performed from the *Gape of Florida* to the 67 degree and a half of Northerly latitude, being said by some to be the first that discovered *Florida*, *Virginia* and *New-found-land*.

*Vasques de Gama* his voyage to *Africa*.

1500.

*Christopher Columbus* his fourth and last voyage to the *West-Indies*.

*Falser Corterriaglis* a *Portugal*, his voyage to discover the North-West passage, he discovered *Greenland*, or *Terra Corterriaglis*, *Terra di Laborodoro*.

1501.

*Amerigus Vesputius* a *Florentine* employed by the King of *Castile* and *Portingal*, to

( 231 )

by Christopher Columbus, named from him  
seven year after Columbus, America.

1506.

Christopher Columbus dyed.

1508.

Henry the Seventh dyed August the Two  
and twentieth.

Henry the Eighth King of England.

1514.

Sebastian Cabota, the Son of John made  
further discovery of all the North-east  
coasts from Cape Florida to New-found-land,  
and Terra Labrador.

1516.

The voyage of Sir Thomas Pert Vice-Ad-  
miral of England, and Sebastian Cabota, the  
Eighth of Henry the Eighth to Brasil, St.  
Domingo, and So Juan de puerto rico.

1520.

Ferdinando Magellano a noble Portugall  
set forth to sail about the world, but was  
1521 unfortunately slain.

1522.

The Bermuduz-Ise 400 in number, be-  
ing 500 miles distant from Virginia, and  
3500 miles from the City of London in the  
latitude 32 degrees and 30 minutes, disco-  
vered now accidentally by John Bermuduz  
a Spaniard.

S 3

1523.

(232)

1523.

Stephen Gomez his voyage to discover  
North-west passage, some will have it  
Twenty five.

1527.

New-found-land discovered by one  
drew Thorn, the Southern part but  
leagues from England.

+ ..... John de Ponce for the Spaniard took  
possession of Florida.

1528.

Nevis or Mevis planted now according  
some writers.

1534. no Island

California questioned, whether Island  
Continent, first discovered by the Spaniards

+ ..... Nova Francia lying between the 40  
50 degree of the Arctic-poles Altitude dis-  
covered by Jaques Cartier in his first voyage  
the first Colony planted in Canada.

1536.

The Puritan-Church policy began now  
Geneva.

1541.

Monsieur du Barvals voyage to No-  
Francia, sent to inhabit those parts.

1548.

Henry the Eighth dyed.

Edward the Sixth King of England began  
to Raign.

Sebasti-  
land.



(233)

*Sebastian Cabota* made grand Pilot of  
England by *Edward the Sixth*.

1550.

The sweating sickness in England.

1553.

*Edward the Sixth* dyed.

*Mary Queen of England* began to Raign.

*Sir Hugh Willoughby*, and all his men in  
two Ships in his first attempt to discover  
the North-east passage, were in October frozen  
to death in the Haven called *Arzima* in *Lap-*  
*land*.

1558.

*Queen Mary* dyed.

*Elizabeth Queen of England* began to  
Raign November the Seventeenth.

1560.

*Salvaterra* a Spaniard his voyage to the  
North-west passage.

1562.

*Sir John Hawkin's* first voyage to the  
West-Indies.

The first expedition of the French into  
*Florida*, undertaken by *John Ribald*. . . . .

1562

1565.

*Tobacco* first brought into England by *Sir*  
*John Hawkins*, but it was first brought into  
use by *Sir Walter Rawleigh* many years after.

1566.

The Puritans began to appear in Eng-  
land.

S.4

1569.

(234)

1569.

Anthony Jenkinson the first of the  
that sailed through the *Caspian-Sea*.

1572.

Private Presbyteries now first erected  
in *England*.

Sir Francis Drake's first voyage to  
*West-Indies*.

1573.

The *Hollanders* seek for aid from *Queen Elizabeth*.

1576.

Sir Martin Frobisher the first in *Queen Elizabeth's* days that sought for the North  
west passage, or the straight, or passage to  
*China*, and *meta incognita*, in three former  
voyages, others will have it in 1577.

1577.

November the 17 Sir Francis Drake began  
his voyage about the world with five Ships  
and 164 men setting sail from *Plimouth*  
putting off *Cape de verde*. The beginning of  
*February*, he saw no Land till the fifth of  
*April*, being past the line 30 degrees of  
latitude, and in the 36 degree entered the  
*River Plates* whence he fell with the straight  
of *Magellan* the 21 of *August*, which was  
three of his Ships he passed, having cast  
the other two as impediments to him, and  
the *Marigold* tossed from her Generalship  
passage

passage was no more seen. The other commanded by Capt. *Winter* shaken off also by Tempest, returned thorow the Streights and recovered *England*, only the *Pelican*, whereof himself was Admiral, held on her course to *Chile*, *Coquimbo*, *Cinnama*, *Palma*, *Lima*, upon the west of *America*, where he passed the line 1579 the first day of *March*, and so forth until he came to the latitude 47. Thinking by those North Seas to have found passage to *England*, but fogs, frosts and cold winds forced him to turn his course South-west from thence, and came to Anchor 38 degrees from the line, where the King of that Countrey presented him his Net-work Crown of many coloured feathers, and therewith resigned his Scepter of Government unto his Dominion, which Countrey Sir *Francis Drake* took possession of in the Queens name, and named it *Nova Albion*, which is thought to be part of the Island of *California*.

Sir *Martin Frobisher's* second voyage.

1578.

Sir *Humphrey Gilbert* a *Devonshire* Knight attempted to discover *Virginia*, but without success.

Sir *Martin Frobisher's* third voyage to *Mesa incognita*. *Freetzeland* now called *West-England*, 25 leagues in length, in the latitude of 57. Sir



(236)

Sir Francis Drake now passed the Strait of Magellan in the Ship called the *Pelican*.

1579.

Sir Francis Drake discovered *Nova Albion* in the South-Sea.

Others will have Sir Martin Frobisher first voyage to discover the North-west passage to be this year.

1580.

From *Nova Albion* he fell with *Ternate* one of the Isles of *Molucco*, being courteously entertained of the King, and from thence he came unto the Isles of *Calebes*, to *John Major*, to *Cape buona speranza*, and fell with the coasts of *Guinea*, where crossing against the line, he came to the height of the *Azores*, and thence to *England* upon the third of November 1580. after three years lacking twelve days, and was Knighted, and his Ship laid up at *Deptford* as a monument of his fame.

1581.

The Provinces of *Holland* again seek for aid to the Queen of *England*.

1582.

Sir *Humphrey Gilbert* took possession of *New found-land* or *Terra Nova*, in the harbour of *St. John*, for and in the name of the Queen.

Queen Elizabeth, it lyeth over against the  
gulf of St. Lawrence, and is between 46  
and 53 degrees of the North-poles Altitude.

1583.

Sir Walter Rawleigh in Ireland.

Sir Humphrey Gilbert attempted a planta-  
tion in some remote parts in New-England.

He perished in his return from New-  
foundland.

1584.

The woful year of subscription so called  
by the Brethren, or Disciplinarians.

Sir Walter Rawleigh obtained of Queen  
Elizabeth a Patent for the discovery and  
peopling of unknown Countries, not actu-  
ally possessed by any Christian Prince. Da-  
ted March 25. in the six and twentieth of  
her Raign,

April the 27 following, he set forth two *the first*  
Barkes under the Command of Mr. Philip *De Witt*  
Amadas and Mr. Arthur Barlow, who arri-  
ved on that part of America, which that  
Virgin Queen named Virginia, and thereof  
her Majesties name took possession *on the 19th*  
July the Thirteenth. *of the Captaine*

1585.

Cautionary Towns and Forts in the  
low-Countreys delivered unto Queen Eliza-  
beths hands.

Sir Richard Greenville was sent by Sir  
Wal.

Walter Rawleigh April the Ninth, with a Fleet of 7 sail to Virginia, and was stiled General of Virginia. He landed in the Mouth of St. John de porto Rico May the Twelfth and there fortified themselves and built a Pinnasse, &c. In Virginia they left 100 men under the Government of Mr. Ralph Lane and others.

Sir Francis Drake's voyage to the West Indies, wherein were taken the Cities of Pango, St. Domingo Cartagena, and the Town of St. Augustine in Florida.

Now (say some) Tobacco was first brought into England by Mr. Ralph Lane out of Virginia.

Others will have Tobacco to be first brought into England from Peru, by Sir Francis Drake's Mariners.

Capt. John Davies first voyage to discover the North-west passage, encouraged by Sir Francis Walsingham, principal Secretary.

1586.

Mr. Thomas Candish of Trimely, in the County of Suffolk Esq. began his voyage in the ship called the Desire, and two ships more to the South-Sea through the Streight of Magellan (and from thence round about the circumference of the whole earth burnt and ransack'd in the entrance of Chile)

which may be true for the Indians of Virginia had Tobacco before the use of it before the English came



Peru and New-Spain, near the great Island  
of California in the South-Sea; and returned  
to *Plimouth* with a pretious booty 1588.  
September the Eighth, being the Third since  
*Magellan*, that circuited the earth, our Eng-  
lish voyagers were never out-stript by any.  
The Natives in *Virginia* conspired against  
the English.

The same year Sir *Richard Greenville* Ge-  
neral of *Virginia* arrived there with three  
ships, bringing relief from Sir *Walter Raw-*  
*leigh* to the Colony.

Mr. *John Davies* second voyage to disco-  
ver the North-west passage.

1587.

Sir *Walter Rawleigh* sent another Colony  
of 150 persons under the Government of  
Mr. *John White*.

Mr. *John Davies* third voyage to discover  
the North-west passage.

Sir *Francis Drake*, with four ships took  
from the Spaniards one million, 189200  
Ducats in one voyage.

1588.

Queen *Elizabeth* opposed her Authority  
against the Brethrens books and writings.

Sir *Francis Drake* Vice-Admiral of the  
English Fleet, the Lord-Admiral bestowed  
the order of Knight-hood upon Mr. *John*  
Haw.

xx

Mr.  
*Purissana*  
some of  
the first  
Deputies

*Hawkins, Martin Forbisher and others, July*  
the Five and twentieth.

The Spanish Armado defeated, consisting  
of 130 ships, wherein were 19290 Souldiers  
2080 chained Rowers, 2630 great Ordnance,  
Commanded by *Perezius Guzman Duke*  
of *Medina Sedonia*, and under him *Johannes*  
*Martinus Recaldus* a great Seaman; The  
Fleet coming on like a half-moon, the horns  
of the front extending one from the other  
about 7 miles asunder, it was preparing  
years, and was blackt to make it seem more  
terrible. *(was Defied by the English)*

1589.

The Portugall voyage under the conduct  
of Sir Francis Drake.

Mr. Thomas Candish now finished his voy-  
age about the world, as some will have it.

1590.

Now Tobacco first used in England, as  
some will have it.

1591.

The first Englishman that ever was in the  
Bermuduze or Summer-Islands, was one  
Henry May.

The voyage of Capt. Newport to the  
West-Indies, where upon the coast of *Hispaniola*,  
he took and burnt three Towns,  
and Nineteen sail of ships and Frigates.

Mr. Thomas Candish last voyage, in which  
he dyed.

1593.

1593.

Sir Martin Frobisher Commander of the  
English Fleet slain in the quarrel of H. King  
of Navarr.

The last voyage of Sir Francis Drake, and  
John Hawkins to the West-Indies with  
ships of the Queens, and twelve other  
ships and Barks containing 2400 men and  
boys, in which voyage they both dyed, and  
Francis Drake's Coffin was thrown over  
board near Porto bello.

1594.

Sir Robert Duddleys voyage to Trinidad,  
and the coast of Paria.

Mr. James Lancasters voyage to Fernam-  
bock the port Town of Olinda in Brazil,  
in which voyage he took 29 ships and Frigates  
surprized the said port Town, and there  
found the Cargazon or fraught of a rich  
Indian Carack, which together with great  
abundance of Sugars and Cottons he  
brought from thence; lading therewith  
seven sail of tall ships and barks.

1595.

The voyage of Sir Amias Preston, & Capt.  
George Sommers to the West-Indies, where  
they took, sacked, spoiled and abandoned the  
Island of Puerto Santo, the Island of Cock near  
Marga-

*the Cargazo or  
fraught of  
lading of*



Margarita, the Fort and Town of Cumana, the stately City of St. Jago de Leon, and the Town of Cumana ransomed, and Jamaica entered.

Sir Walter Rawleigh's voyage into Guiana, discovered by him. In which voyage he took St. Joseph a Town upon the Rio Orinoco.

The Sabbatarian doctrine published by the Brethren. *See Penalties for Brethren or Presbyterians* Sabbath 8596.

The voyage to Cadex, Sir Walter Rawleigh Rere-Admiral.

The voyage of Sir Anthony Sherley intended for the Island of St. Tome, but performed to St. Jago, Dominga, Margarita, along the coast of Terra Firma to the Island of Jamaica, situated between 17 and 18 degrees of the North-poles elevation (which he conquered, but held it not long) from whence to the bay of Honduras, 30 leagues up Rio dulce, and homeward by Newfound Land.

1597.

The voyage to the Azores, Sir Walter Rawleigh Capt. of the Queens Guard Rere-Admiral.

Porto Rico, taken by the Earl of Cumberland.

1599.

The Grand Canary taken by the Dutch Commander Vanderdoes.

(243)

1600.

The Colonies in Virginia supplied by public purse. *a great subscription to settling the colony*

1602.

Queen Elizabeth dyed March the Four and twentieth.

King James began to Reign.

The North parts of Virginia, i. e. New-England further discovered by Capt. Barbo-  
roff. Some will have him to be the discoverer.

Capt. George Weymouth's voyage to discover the North-west passage.

Divers of our English in the North of England entered into a Covenant of wor-  
shipping of God. *Dispensing from Ch. England*

1603.

King James came into England, the fifth of April.

Monsieur Champlains voyage to Canada. — 1603  
November the seventeenth Sir Walter Raleigh Arraigned and Condemned.

1604.

Monsieur du Point and du Monts voyage to Canada. *the French to settle Nova Scotia*

1605.

Monsieur du Point and du Monts remove the French habitation to Port-Royal. *in Nova Scotia my*  
James Halle's voyage to Groenland, and *Bay of Fundy*  
to find out the North-west passage.

T

1606.

1606.

The province of *Main* possessed by  
English by publick Authority King *Ja*  
Sir *John Popham*, &c.

A Colony first sent to *New-England*  
Sir *John Popham* chief Justice of the C  
mon pleas.

1606. *James-town* founded in *Virginia*.

*James Halls* second voyage, to find  
the North-west passage.

Mr. *John Knight* his North-west voy  
lost his ship sunk by the Ice.

A Colony sent to *Virginia*, called by  
*Indians Wingandacoa*, the first that  
firm possession there. in the *Ho/River*

1607.

*Plimouth* Plantation in *New-England*  
tempted.

*Sr. Georges* Fort built at the mouth  
the River *Sagadahoc*, under the Preside  
of Capt. *George Popham* and Capt. *R*  
*Gilbert*, who built the Fort.

*James Halls* third voyage to find out  
North-west passage.

*Hudsons* first voyage to find out  
North-west passage.

1608.

*Virginia* planted.

A Colony sent to *New-found-land*.



Capt. John Smith fished now for Whales  
at Monbiggen.

Hudsons second voyage to the North-  
west met a Mermaid in the Sea. That there be  
such Creatures see Plinie, Albertus Magnus,  
Aristotle, Elian, Theodorus Gaza, Alexander  
Alexandria, Gorgius Trapozensus, Jul.  
Caesar, Stows Annals in Anno Dom. 1204.  
at Oreford in Suffolk a Mareman taken.

1609. Sir Thomas Gales and Sir George Summers  
going to Virginia, suffered shipwrack upon  
the Bermudos-Islands where they continued  
ill 1610.

Hudsons third voyage to New-found-land  
discovered Mobegan-River in New-England. now New.  
The Dutch set down by Mobegan-River. York & the

1610. River called Hudsons River

Capt. Whitburns voyage to discover the  
North-west passage, saw a Mermaid in the  
harbour of St. Johns at New-found-land by  
the River side. mermaid

Hudsons last and fatal voyage to discover  
the North-west passage, where he was frozen  
to death. or killed by the Natives —

Dales-gift founded in Virginia.

Sundry of the English nation removed  
out of the North of England into the Ne-  
therlands, and gathered a Church at Leyden,  
where they continued until the year 1620.

1611.

Sir Thomas Dale Governour of Virginia  
The famous Arch-Pirate Peter Easton.

1612.

Bermudus first planted, and Mr. R. M.  
sent over Governour, the first that pla  
a Colony in the Bermudus.

James Halls fourth voyage to disc  
the North west passage, was slain by  
Savages.

Capt. Buttons voyage to discover  
North-west passage.

1613.

Port Royal destroyed by Sir Samuel A  
Governour of Virginia.

Mr. John Rolfe a Gentleman of good  
haviour fell in love with Pocahontas,  
only Daughter of Powhatan a King in  
ginia and married her, she was Christe  
and called the Lady Rebecca, and dyed  
Gravesend Anno Dom. 1617. Sir L  
Stukely brought up her Son Thomas Rolfe.  
I had seen some 1614. of his descent.

Bermudus planted further.

Powhatons Daughter in Virginia Christe  
ed Rebecca.

Capt. Gibbins voyage to find out  
North-west pass: ge.

now  
new York New Netherlands began to be planted  
by the Dutch.

*Hudson River* (247)

on Mobegan-River, Sir Samuel Argol routed them.

1615.

Sir Richard Hawkins voyage into those parts of New-England.

1616.

Capt. Gibbins second voyage to find out the North-west passage.

A new supply sent by Capt. Daniel Tucker to the Bermudas

Pocahontas and Mr. Rolfe her Husband went for England with Sir Thomas Dale, and arrived at Plymouth the 12 of June.

1617.

Sir Walter Rawleighs last and unfortunate voyage to Guiana, where he took St. Thomes only Town of Guiana possessed by the Indians.

1618.

The Comet or blazing-star whose motion was by some observed to be from East to West.

1619.

Sir Walter Rawleigh beheaded in the Parliament yard.

Bermudas Islands divided into Tribes and Centreds, to each tribe a Burrough.

1620.

The English in Virginia divided into several Burroughs.

T 3

1620.



1620.

Letters Patents obtained from King James for the Northern part of Virginia. i. e. New-England.

In July sundry of the English set sail from Holland for Southampton.

August the first, they set sail from Southampton for America, and arrived the Eleventh of November at Cape-Cod, where they entered into a body politick, and chose one Mr. John Carver their Governour, calling the place where they settled New-Plimouth. In January and February following was a mortality among the English, which swept away half the Company.

Mrs. Susanna White delivered of a Son at new-Plimouth, Chriftened Peregrine; he was the first of the English that was born in new-England, and was afterwards the Lieutenant of the Military Company of Massachusetts in Plimouth Colony.

New-Plimouth built, the first Town in new-England.

Squanto an Indian in new-England, carried into England by Mr. Hunt a Master of Ship, but brought home again by Mr. Deemer a Gentleman imployed by Sir Ferdinando Gorges for discovery.

1621.

April, Mr. John Carver Governour of  
 new-Plimouth dyed, and Mr. William Brand-  
 was chosen Governour.

The Natives in Virginia murdered about  
 40 English.

Massacoe

1622.

The Fort at new-Plimouth built: a great  
 drought this Summer, from May the Third,  
 till the middle of July, there was no Rain.

Mr. Thomas Weston Merchant sent over  
 lusty men who settled themselves in a  
 part of the Massachusetts-bay, now called  
 Weymouth.

The order of the Knights of Nova Scotia  
 ordained by King James. Hereditarie, they  
 wear an Orange tawny Ribbin.

Sir Ferdinando Gorges Patent for the pro-  
 vince of Maine in New-England.

The Dutch tortured the English at Am-  
 sterdam, 1623.

Westons plantation wholly ruined by their  
 disorders.

Mr. Robert Gorge, Sir Ferdinando Gorges  
 brother arrived in Plimouth, and began a  
 plantation of the Massachusetts bay, having  
 Commission from the Council of New-Eng-  
 land to be general Governour of the Coun-  
 trey, carrying over one Mr. Morrel a Mini-  
 ster,

ster, but being discouraged, he returned  
England.

A fire at *Plimouth*, which did considerable dammage, several of the Inhabitants were killed through discontent and casualties returned into *Virginia*.

Three thousand English now upon *Bermudas* ten Forts, and in those ten 50 pieces of Ordnance.

1624.

The number of Magistrates increased five now at *New-Plimouth*.

from  
Cattle  
over

The first neat Cattle carried over *New-England* to *New-Plimouth* was three Heifers and a Bull.

1625.

*St. Christophers Island* planted now by English 25 leagues in compass, a great many little Rivers, in 17 degrees and 25 minutes.

King *James* dyed in 1625, and *King Charles* the first began his Reign March seven and twentieth.

1627.

The first distribution of Lands among the Inhabitants of *New-Plimouth*.

A Colony of English planted upon *Island of Barbados*, which in a short time increased to 20000, besides Negroes.

1628.

Mr. *John Endicot* arrived in *New-England*.



land with some number of people, and set  
down first by *Cape-Ann*, at a place called  
afterwards *Gloster*, but their abiding place  
was at *Salem*, where they built the first  
town in the *Massachusetts* Patent.

The *Indians* at the *Massachusetts*; were at  
that time by sickness decreased from 30000  
to 300. *a great providence to an infant colony*  
*Nevis* or *Mevis* planted now by the Eng-  
lish 3 or 4000 upon it.

Mr. *Morton* of *Merrimount* taken prisoner  
by the *Massachusetts*, and sent into *England*.

1629.

Three ships arrived at *Salem* bringing a  
great number of passengers from *England*;  
infectious diseases amongst them.

Mr. *Endicot* chosen Governour.

Mr. *Higginson*, Mr. *Skelton* and Mr. *Wright*  
Ministers arrived, upon the first of *in 45 years*  
August was the first Church in the *Massachu-*  
*founded*  
*40 Churches*  
*45*  
*120 Towns*  
*tall*  
*Dihonors*  
Colony gathered at *Salem*, from which  
year to this present year is 45 years, in the  
compass of these years in this Colony, there  
have been gathered forty Churches, and 120  
Towns built in all the Colonies of New-  
England. *that could not have liberty of Conscience*

The Church of new *Plimouth*, was plant-  
ed in New-*England* eight years before o-  
thers. *England*

The book of Common-prayer pleaded  
Then I say all? I mean verber for others  
of the Church of *England* —

*Great Comotions at this Time about Religion  
Tenets & Observing (252) Ceremonies*

for, and practised in Massachusetts Colony  
two of the Patentees, but was at last pro-  
hibited by the Authority there.

1630.

The Tenth of July, John Winthrop Esq  
and the Assistants arrived in New-Eng  
with the Patent for the Massachusetts, Capt  
landed on the North-side of Charles River, and Ad  
with him went over Mr. Thomas Dudley, John  
Mr. Isaac Johnson Esquires; Mr. John Winthrop  
Mr. George Philips, Mr. Maverick ( the first of the  
ther of Mr. Samuel Maverick, one of the Deputy  
Majesties Commissioners ) Mr. Warcham, Six  
Ministers.

*Cost  
9500 -  
12000*

The passage of the people in the Eagle  
and nine other Vessels to New-England cost at  
to 9500 pounds. The Swine, Goats, Sheep, and  
Neat and Horses cost to transport 12000  
pounds, besides the price they cost. The Eagle  
was called the Arabella in honour of the first  
Lady Arabella, wife to Isaac Johnson Esq  
they set down first upon Noddles-Island, the Dr.  
Lady Arabella abode at Salem.

Mr. Isaac Johnson a Magistrate of the  
Massachusetts, and his Lady dyed soon after  
their arrival.

John Winthrop Esq; chosen Governour  
for the remainder of the year, Mr. Thomas  
Dudley deputy Governour, Mr. Simon Breckin-  
street S. cretary.

Christ

Charles-town, the first town built.

Mr. Higginson Teacher of Salem Church.

1639.

A very sharp winter in New-England.

+

1631.

*the greatest Plague of his Time*

Capt. John Smith Governour of Virginia,

Admiral of New-England now dyed in

*See his History of Virginia*

John Winthrop Esq; chosen Governour

the Massachusetts. Mr. Thomas Dudley

Deputy Governour.

Sir Richard Saltingstall went for New-

England, set down at Water-town.

Five Churches gathered this year, the

first at Boston. Mr. John Wilson Pastor, the

second at Water-town by Mr. Philips, the

third at Dorchester by Mr. Maverick and Mr.

Wareham, the fourth at Roxbury by Mr. Eliot,

the fifth at Lynn by Mr. Stephen Batcheler

their first Teacher.

Dr. Wilson gave 1000 pound to New-

England, with which they stored themselves

with great Guns.

1632.

John Winthrop chosen Governour, Mr.

Thomas Dudley Deputy Governour.

Sir Christopher Gardiner descended of the

house of Gardiner Bishop of Winchester,

Knighted at Jerusalem of the Sepulchery

arrived

*a Papist*



for  
Whom  
the  
would admit  
no such wicked  
Savage —

arrived in New-England with a  
young woman his Concubine, settled  
self in the Bay of Massachusetts, was  
used by the Magistrates, and by the  
Magistrates of New-Plimouth to which place  
retired.

A terrible cold winter in New-England

1633.

Mr. Edward Winslow chosen Govern  
of New-Plimouth.

The number of Magistrates at New  
Plimouth increase to seven.

An infectious fever amongst the Inhab  
itants of New-Plimouth, whereof many  
dyed.

Mr. John Winthrop chosen Governour  
the Massachusetts Colony, Mr. Thomas Dudley  
Deputy Governour.

Mr. Thomas Hooker Mr. Hains and Mr.  
Cotton Ministers arrived in New-England  
in one ship, and Mr. Stone and Mr. William  
Collier a liberal Benefactor to the Colony  
New-Plimouth.

Mr. John Cotton chosen Teacher of the  
first Church at Boston.

A Church at Cambridge gathered by Mr.  
Thomas Hooker their first Pastor.

Great swarms of strange flies up and  
down the Countrey, which was a preface  
of the following mortality. a Species of

Cicada mentioned in Ray's Letter 1633  
John 106. 10<sup>th</sup> appears in 14 or 15 years

1634.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour of New-Plimouth.

Mr. Thomas Dudley chosen Governour of the Massachusetts Colony, and Mr. Roger Manton Deputy-Governour.

The Countrey now was really placed in posture of War, to be in readines at all times.

In the Spring a great sickness among the *Small pox & Measles* Indians, by the small pox. *destroyed most of the Narragansets*

The Pequett War with the Narragansets.

Mr. Skelton Pastor to the Church at Salem.

Mr. John Norton, and Mr. Thomas Shepley arrive in New-England.

A Church gathered at Ipswich, the first after Mr. Nathaniel Ward.

A Church gathered at Newberry.

Capt. Stone turn'd Pirate, at the Dutch plantation. *by New York*

The cruel Massacre of Capt. Stone and Capt. Norton at Connecticut-River, by the Pequet Indians.

1635.

Mr. John Haines chosen Governour of the Massachusetts Colony, Mr. Richard Bellingham Deputy Governour.

Mr. Zachary Sims arrived in New-England, and Mr. Richard Bellingham. This

This year Eleven Ministers arrived  
New-England.

Mr. Norton Teacher at Ipswich, Mr. [unclear]  
and Mather Teacher at Dorchester.

Sir Henry Vain Junior, arrived in  
England, Mr. Richard Saltingtal, Sir [unclear]  
and Saltingtal's Son, Mr. Roger Harl-  
den, and Hugh Peters.

*Collyer's*

*and his*

Hugh Peters chosen Pastor of Salem.  
A Church at Hartford in the Colony  
Connecticut now gathered.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
New-Plimouth.

Capt. William Gorges, Sir Ferdinand  
Gorges Nephew sent over Governour of  
province of Main, then called new Som-  
setshire.

Saturday the 15 of August, an Hurri-  
or mighty storm of wind and rain, which  
did much hurt in New-England.

1636.

Sir Henry Vane Junior, Governour of  
Massachusetts Colony, John Winthrop  
Deputy Governour, Mr. Roger Harlaken  
leader of their military Forces.

Mr. Edward Winslow a Worcestershire  
born, chosen Governour of new-Plim-  
Colony.

1636

Connecticut Colony planted.

Mr. John Oldham murdered in his Bay  
by the Indians of Block Island.



A Church gathered at Hingham, Mr. Hubbord arrived now in New-England Teacher at Hingham.

Mr. Flint, Mr. Carter, Mr. Walton, Ministers arrived now in New-England.

Mr. Fenwick, Mr. Partrick, Mr. Nathaniel Rogers, and Mr. Samuel White, arrived now in New-England.

A General Court held at Boston against <sup>they fled from Persecution</sup> ~~but soon~~ Mrs. Hutchinson the American Jezabel, <sup>began to Per-</sup> August the 30. where the opinions and <sup>that others</sup> errors of Mrs. Hutchinson and her Associates <sup>that differed</sup> were condemned. <sup>from them</sup>

A Counsel held at New-town about the same business October the second, and at Boston again.

1637.  
Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour New-Plimouth Colony.

Mr. John Wentthrop chosen Governour of Massachusetts Colony, Mr. Thomas Dudley chosen Deputy Governour.

New-haven Colony began now, Mr. Eaton chosen Governour, John Davenport Pastor.

Mr. Hopkins arrived now in New-England.

A second Church gathered at Dedham, Mr. John Allen Pastor.

The Pequets wars, in which war the English slew and took prisoners about 700 Indi-

he does not tell the great ans,  
number of English killed by them.  
for Mr. Adams this country would not  
last much

ans, amongst which 13 of their Sachems  
the great terror of the Natives, they  
the male children of the Pequers to  
Bermudas.

This year the Antinomian and Familist  
errors were broached in the Countrey,  
cially at Boston.

A Synod called, which condemned  
errors.

A General Court held at New-town again  
M<sup>rs</sup>. Hutchinson and the rest.

M<sup>rs</sup>. Hutchinson and others banished  
the Magistrates of the Massachusetts  
lonv.

A hideous monster born at Boston of  
M<sup>rs</sup>. Mary Dyer.

Sir Henry Vane and the Lord Lee returned  
for England.

In *seventeen years* The Ministers that went for New-England  
*minuten 94* chiefly in the ten first years, ninety four, returned from  
*Returned 27* which returned for England twenty seven, less C  
*Deceased 36* dyed in the Countrey thirty six, yet alive Now  
*Alive 31* the Countrey thirty one.

— The number of ships that transported  
passengers to New-England, in these times, Mr.  
was 298 suppoled : men, women and children, Mr. J  
died as near as can be guessed 21200. and Col

The Spaniards took the Island of Providence, one of the Summer-Islands from the  
English.

21200 people

(255)

1638.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour of  
Plymouth Colony.

Mr. John Winthrop chosen Governour of  
Massachusetts Colony, Mr. Thomas Dudley  
Deputy Governour.

A Church now gathered at Waymouth,  
Gennor Pastor, Mr. Newman succeeded  
Thomas Thatcher.

Three English men put to death at Ply-  
mouth for robbing and murdering an Indian +  
Providence.

June the second a great and terrible earth-  
quake throughout the Countrey.

Samuel Gorton of Warwickshire, a pesti-  
ficious seducer, and blasphemous Atheist,  
Author of the Sects of Gortinians, ban-  
ished Plymouth plantation, whipt and ban-  
ished from Road-Island, banished the Massa-  
chusetts Colony.

Now they set up a Printing-press at Boston  
the Massachusetts.

This year came over Mr. William Thomp-  
son, Mr. Edmund Brown, Mr. David Frisk,  
and Mr. John Harvard, the founder of Har-  
vard Colledge at Cambridge in the Massachu-  
setts Colony, deceased, gave 700 pound to  
the erecting of it.

*printing  
begun*

11

1639.



1639.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour of new-Plimouth Colony.

Mr. John Winthrop chosen Governour of the Massachusetts Colony, Mr. Thomas Dudley Deputy Governour.

Mr. Higginson Teacher at Salem Church, Skelton pastor, and an exhorting Elder. This was the first Church gathered in the Massachusetts Colony, and it increased to

43 Churches in joynt Communion with another, and in these Churches were about 7750 souls.

Mr. Herbert Pelham now arrived in New-England.

A Church gathered at Hampton, Daulton pastor, and Mr. Batcheler Teacher.

Another Church gathered at Salisbury.

October the Eleventh and Twelfth, Spanish Navy was set upon by the Holland in the Downs, they were in all 60 sail, Spaniards were beaten.

A very sharp winter in New-England.

1640.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour of new-Plimouth Colony.

Mr. Thomas Dudley chosen Governour of the Massachusetts Colony, and Mr. Richard Bellingham Deputy Governour.

(261)

Civil Wars began in England. 1640

Mr. Huet Minister arrived in New-Eng-

land, Mr. Peck and Mr. Saxton.

A Church gathered at Brainree, Mr. Wheelwright pastor.

Mr. Henry Dunster arrived in New-England.

1641.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
new-Plimouth Colony.

Mr. Richard Bellingham chosen Gover-  
nour of the Massachusetts Colony, Mr. John  
Endicot Deputy.

A Church gathered at Gloucester in the  
Massachusetts Colony.

A sharp winter in New-England, the har-  
bours and salt bayes frozen over so as passa-  
ge for Men, Horses, Oxen and Carts five  
weeks.

1642.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
new-Plimouth Colony.

Mr. John Winthrop chosen Governour of  
Massachusetts Colony, John Endicot Esq;  
Deputy Governour.

This Spring Cowes and Cattle fell from  
pound a Cow, to six, seven and eight  
and a Cow of a sudden. *from their great increase*

A Church now gathered at Woburn in  
Massachusetts Colony.

*intirely*  
*Burns*  
*January 25*  
*1764*

Thirteen able Ministers now at this  
in *new-Plimouth* Jurisdiction.  
Harvard-Colledge founded with a  
Public Library.

Ministers bred in *New-England*  
(excepting about 10) in *Harvard-Col*  
one hundred thirty two; of which  
in the Countrey Ten, now living eight  
removed to *England* forty one. *June*  
*wick* Parliament Admiral.

1643.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Govern  
of the *new-Plimouth* Colony.

Mr. John Winthrop chosen Govern  
the *Massachusetts* Colony, Mr. John  
Deputy Governour.

May 19. the first Combination of  
four united Colonies, viz. *Plimouth*,  
*chusets*, *Connecticut*, and *new-haven*.

1644.

Mr. Edward Winslow chosen Govern  
of *new-Plimouth* Colony.

John Endicott Esq; chosen Govern  
the *Massachusetts* Colony, John Win  
Esq; Deputy Governour.

A Church gathered at *Haveril*. Mr.  
*Harlackendin* dyed about this time.

A Church gathered at *Reading* in  
*England*.

A Church gathered at *Wenham*,  
the *Massachusetts* Colony.



(263)

The Town of Eastham erected now by  
in *Plimouth*.

1645.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
new-*Plimouth* Colony.

Mr. Thomas Dudley chosen Governour of  
Massachusetts Colony, and Mr. John Win-  
thorpe Deputy Governour, Mr. John Endicott  
major General.

A Church gathered at *Springfield*.

1646.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
new-*Plimouth* Colony.

Mr. John Winthorpe chosen Governour of  
Massachusetts. Mr. Thomas Dudley Deputy  
and Mr. John Endicott major General.

Two Suns appeared towards the latter  
end of the year.

This year they drew up a body of Laws  
for the well ordering of their Common-  
wealth (as they termed it) printed in  
1648.

Three men of War arrived in new-*Pli-  
mouth* harbour under the Command of  
Mr. Capt. Thomas Cromwell, richly laden, a muti-  
ne amongst the Sea-men, whereby one man  
was killed.

The second Synod at *Cambridge* touching  
the duty and power of magistrates in mat-  
ters of Religion.

Se-

Secondly, the nature and power  
Synods.

*When y now* Mr. John Eliot first preached to the Indians  
*no Remains* in their Native language, the principal  
*of their Pious* instruments of converting the Indians,  
*Independants* John Eliot Senior, Mr. John Eliot Junior  
*For the* Mr. Thomas Mayhew, Mr. Pierson, Mr. B.  
*Indians* Mr. James, and Mr. Cotton.

*the same Wild* People as to 1647. be sent to  
Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
of new-Plimouth Colony.

Mr. John Winthrop chosen Governour  
the Massachusetts Colony, Mr. Thomas Dudley  
Deputy Governour, and Mr. John Endicott  
Major General.

Now Mr. Thomas Hooker pastor of  
Church at Hartford dyed.

*the* The Tartars over-run China.  
1648.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
of new Plimouth Colony.

John Winthrop chosen Governour of  
Massachusetts colony, Mr. Thomas Dudley  
Deputy Governour, Mr. John Endicott  
General.

A Church gathered at Andover.

A Church gathered at Malden Mr. Sargent  
pastor.

A second Church gathered at Boston.

A third Synod at Cambridge published  
the platform of Discipline.

(265)

Jan. 30. King Charles the first murde-

Charles the Second began his Raig.

Their Laws in the Massachusetts colony  
dated.

1649.

John Winthrop Esq; Governour of the  
Massachusetts colony March the 26 deceased.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
new Plimouth.

Mr. John Endicot chosen Governour of  
Massachusetts colony.

Mr. Thomas Dudley Deputy Governour,  
Mr. Gibbons major General.

An innumerable Company of Caterpillars +  
some parts of New-England destroyed  
the fruits of the Earth.

August the 25 Mr. Thomas Shepherd Pastor  
Cambridge Church dyed.

Mr. Phillips also dyed this year.

1650.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
new Plimouth colony.

Mr. Thomas Dudley chosen Governour of  
Massachusetts colony, Mr. John Endicot  
Deputy Governour, Mr. Gibbons major Ge-  
neral.

A great mortality amongst children this +  
year in New-England.

114

1651.



1651.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governor of new-Plimouth colony.

Mr. John Endicot chosen Governor of the Massachusetts colony, Mr. Thomas Deputy Governour, Mr. Gibbons major general.

The City Bilbo totally cover'd with snow for 15 days, 16 foot above the tops of the highest houses, the loss was very great to the whole Kingdom, there being no stock of dryed fish and dryed Goat the general dyet of Spain.

Barbados surrendred to the Parliament, its longitude 322, latitude 13 degrees or 18 miles in compass.

*returned to* Hugh Peters and Mr. Wells, and John Behanpoker returned into England.

1652.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governor of new-Plimouth colony.

Mr. John Endicot chosen Governor of the Massachusetts colony, Mr. Thomas Deputy Governour, Mr. Gibbons major general.

John Cotton Teacher of Boston died, a Comet was seen at the time of sickness hanging over New-England, which went out soon after his death.

*Who can think Mr. Cotton a Man of such Importance with Heaven, that a Comet should to portage his Death: but such was his*

Whidnappers (267) that stole Children to sell  
The Spirits that took Children in England, over Sea  
did to be set a work first by the Parliament, N. England  
Governor Hugh Peters as chief Agent, Actor or  
Procurer.

1653.

Oliver Cromwell Usurped the Title of  
Major General December the Sixteenth.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
of new-Plimouth colony.

Mr. Thomas Dudley chosen Governour of  
Massachusetts colony, Mr. John Endicott  
Deputy Governour, Mr. Gibbons major Gen-  
eral.

Mr. Thomas Dudley Governour of the  
Massachusetts colony dyed, aged about 77  
years at his house at Roxebury, July 31.

A great fire at Boston in New-England.

1654.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
of new-Plimouth colony.

Mr. Bellingham Governour, Endicott  
Deputy:

Major General Gibbons dyed this year:

1655.

Mr. William Bradford chosen Governour  
of new-Plimouth colony. Mr. John Endicott  
Governour of the Massachusetts, Bellingham  
Deputy:

Jamaica taken by the English:

1656.

(268)

1656.

General Mountague taketh Spanish  
Mr. William Bradford chosen Govern  
of new-Plimouth colony, Mr. John Endic  
Governour of the Massachusetts, Mr. Fra  
Willowby Deputy.

1657.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour  
new-Plimouth colony.

Mr. William Bradford now dyed.  
John Endicot Governour, Bellingham Deputy.

Mr. Theophilus Eaton Governour of New  
haven colony dyed.

Fifth monarchy-men rebell.

The Quakers arrive at new-Plimouth.

1658.

Oliver Cromwell dyed September the third  
Richard Cromwell set up.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour  
new-Plimouth colony.

Mr. John Endicot chosen Governour  
the Massachusetts, Bellingham Deputy.

A great Earth-quake in New-England.

Mr. Ralph Partrick minister at Roxbury  
now deceased.

John Philips of Marshfield slain by th  
der and lightning.

1659.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour  
new-Plimouth colony.

Mr. J



Mr. John Endicot chosen Governour of the Massachusetts colony.

The Quakers opinions vented up and down the Countrey.

Mr. Henry Dunster first President of Harvard-Colledge deceased.

Richard Cromwel ended May the seventh.

The Rump Parliament December the six and twentieth put down! *See the Wicked Persecutions*

William Robinson, Marmaduke Stevenson, *of these Hypocrites*  
and Mary Dyer Quakers of Rhode Island sentenced to suffer death by Mr. John Endicot *of these reputed Saints...*

Governour of the Massachusetts colony, which accordingly was executed within a day or two, the prisoners being guarded by Capt: James Oliver with 200 Souldiers to the place of Execution, where the two men were hanged and the woman reprieved at Gallows and banished:

1660.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour of the Plymouth colony.

John Endicot chosen Governour of the Massachusetts colony, Mr. Bellingham Deputy.

James Pierce slain by lightning at New-Month.

May the 29 King Charles the Second returned into England.

June the 20 a damnable cheat like to have been put upon England by a Brief for New-Eng-

England, which as it appeared was produced before the King came in, but not printed (by Mr. Leach in Shoe-lane) till Jan. 24 of January 1660 landed at a Town called Kingsword (alluding to Charles) three miles from Boston, kill'd 40, took Sims minister prisoner, wounded him, his wife and three of his little children carried him away with 57 more, burnt Town, carried them to Argier, their amounting to 12000 pound, the Turk demanding 8000 pound ransom to be paid within 7 moneths. Signed by Thomas Mergers, Edward Calamy, William Jenkins, William Vincent, George Wild, Joseph Carter, John Menord, William Cooper, Thomas Norton Ministers.

Hugh Peters put to death the 16 October.

Thomas Verner a Wine-Cooper hanged and drawn and quartered Jan. 19.

1661.

The fifth Monarchy-men rise at London.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour new Plimouth colony.

Mr. John Endicott chosen Governour the Massachusetts colony, Mr. Bellingham Deputy.

Major Atherton now dyed in New-England.

1662.

Sir Henry Vane beheaded, June the 14.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour of  
Plymouth colony.

Mr. John Endicot chosen Governour of  
the Massachusetts colony.

January 26 and the 28 Earthquakes in  
New-England, 6 or 7 times in the space of  
three days.

1662.  
1663.

John Baker unduely called Capt. Baker,  
hang'd at Tiburn, December the 11 of  
February.

1663.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour of  
Plymouth colony.

Mr. John Endicot chosen Governour of  
the Massachusetts colony.

Mr. Willowby Deputy Governour and Mr.  
Thomas Leveret major General.

April the fifth Mr. John Norton Teacher  
of the first Church in Boston dyed suddenly.

Mr. Samuel Newman Teacher at Rehoboth  
in New-England now dyed.

Mr. Samuel Stone Teacher of Hartford  
Church in New-England, now dyed also.

Several Earth-quakes this year in New-  
England.

Mr. Charles



Charles Chancie batchelor of Divinity  
and President of Harvard-Colledge in New  
England.

1664.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour  
new-Plimouth colony.

Mr. John Endicot chosen Governour  
the Massachusetts colony, Mr. Francis Will  
Deputy Governour, Mr. Thomas Le  
Major General.

May the 20 the Kings Commissioners  
arrived in New-England, viz. Sir Rob  
Carr, Colonel Nicols, Colonel Cartwright  
and Mr. Samuel Maverich, with whom came  
one Mr. Archdale as Agent for Mr. Ferdina  
do Gorges, who brought to the colony in the  
province of Main, Mr. F. Gorges order from  
his Majesty Charles the Second, under  
manual, and his Majesties Letters to the  
Massachusetts concerning the same, to be re  
stored unto the quiet possession and enjoy  
ment of the said province in New-England  
and the Government thereof, the whole  
during the civil Wars in England the Mas  
achusetts colony had usurpt, and (by help  
+ a Jacobs staff) most shamefully encroached  
upon Mr. Gorges rights and priviledges.

The 29 of August, the Manadaes, call  
Novede Belgique, or New Netherlands, the  
chief Town New-Amsterdam, now call

*a figurative expression for  
might overcoming Right*

New-Yorke, Surrendered up unto Sir Ro-  
bert Carr and Colonel Nichols his Majesties  
Commissioners; thirteen days after in Sep-  
tember the Fort and Town of Arania now  
called Albany; twelve days after that, the  
Fort and Town of Amsapha; then de la  
Roche Castle man'd with Dutch and Sweeds,  
the three first Forts and Towns being built  
upon the River Mobegan, otherwise called  
Hudsons River. or North River

The whole Bible Translated into the In-  
dian-Tongue, by Mr. John Eliot Senior, was  
printed at Cambridge in New-England.  
In December a great and dreadful Comet, or  
 blazing-star appeared in the South-east in  
New-England for the space of three moneths,  
which was accompanied with many sad  
effects, great mildews blasting in the Coun-  
try the next Summer. more likely that befel them

1665. for Persecuting & hanging  
Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour of  
Plymouth colony. *Innocent people*

Mr. John Endicott chosen Governour of  
the Massachusetts colony, Mr. Francis Willomby  
Deputy Governour, Mr. Leveret Major Ge-  
neral.

Two Comets or blazing-stars appeared in  
moneths time in England, December 1664.  
and in March following.

Mr. John Endicott Governour of the Mas-  
sachusetts.

*albaney*

*Great Comet*

*Two Comets*

*Massachusetts colony* deceased, *March* the  
and twentieth.

Capt. Davenport kill'd with lightning  
he lay on his bed at the Castle by Boston  
*New-England*, and several wounded.

Wheat exceedingly blasted and mildew  
in *New-England*.

A thousand foot sent this year to  
*French King to Canada*.

Colonel Cartwright in his voyage  
*England* was taken by the Dutch.

The Isle of Providence taken by  
*English* Buchaners, *Puerto Rico* taken  
plundered by the *English* Buchaners  
abandoned.

1666.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour  
of the *Massachusetts colony*.

Mr. Richard Bellingham chosen Governour  
of the *Massachusetts colony*, Mr. *Frederick*  
*Willowby* Deputy Governour, Mr. *Lawrence*  
major General.

*St. Christophers* taken by the French.

July the Lord *Willowby* of *Parham*  
away in a Hurricane about the *Caribbean*  
Islands.

The small pox at *Boston* in the *Massachusetts*  
colony:

Three kill'd in a moment by a blow  
Thunder at *Marshfield* in *New-Plimouth*  
colony



colony, and four at *Pascataway* colony, and  
 vners burnt with lightning, a great whirl-  
 and at the same time.  
 This year also *New-England* had cast  
 away and taken Thirty one Vessels, and  
 in 1667.

The mildews and blasting of Corn still  
 continued.

1667.

Mr. *Thomas Prince* chosen Governour of  
 the *Plimouth* colony.

Mr. *Richard Bellingham* chosen Governour  
 of the *Massachusetts* colony, Mr. *Fr. Willow-*  
 Deputy Governour, and Mr. *Leveret*  
 Major General.

Sir *Robert Carr* dyed next day after his  
 arrival at *Bristol* in *England* June the first.

Several vollies of shot heard discharged  
 the Air at *Nantascot* two miles from  
 Boston in the *Massachusetts* colony.

Mr. *John Davenport* chosen pastor of the  
 Independent Church at *Boston*.

In *March* there appeared a sign in the  
 Heavens in the form of a *Spear*, pointing  
 directly to the *West*.

Sir *John Harman* defeated the *French*  
 Fleet at the *Caribbes*.

Mr. *John Wilson* Pastor of *Boston* Church  
 in the *Massachusetts* colony 37 years now  
 dyed,

died, aged 79, he was Pastor of Church three years before Mr. Cotton, twenty years with him, ten years with Norton, and four years after him.

1668.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour of New-Plimouth colony.

Mr. Richard Bellingham chosen Governour of the Massachusetts colony, Mr. Willomby Deputy Governour, and Mr. Veret major General.

Mr. Samuel Shepherd Pastor of Church died.

April the 27 Mr. Henry Flint Teacher of Braintry died.

July the Ninth Mr. Jonathan Mayhew Pastor of the Church at Cambridge died. he was born at Halifax in Yorkshire England, and was brought up in Harvard Colledge at Cambridge in New-England.

July the Fifteenth, nine of the clock at night, an Eclipse of the moon, till Eleven darkened nine digits and thirty minutes.

July the Seventeenth a great Whale Fifty five foot long, thrown up on the Winter-harbour by Casco in the Province of Maine.

April the Third, Fryday an Earthquake in New-England.

1669.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour of  
Plymouth colony.

Mr. Richard Bellingham chosen Gover-  
nour of the Massachusetts colony, Mr. Fr.  
Willowby Deputy Governour, Mr. Leveret  
Major General.

Mr. Oxenbridge chosen Pastor of the  
Independent Church at Boston.

The wonderful burning of the moun-  
tain *Atna*, or *Gibella* in *Cicilia* March.

1670.

Mr. Thomas Prince chosen Governour of  
Plymouth colony.

Mr. Richard Bellingham chosen Gover-  
nour of the Massachusetts colony, Mr. Fr.  
Willowby Deputy Governour, Mr. Leveret  
Major General.

Mr. Fr. Willowby Deputy Governour  
now dyed.

At a place called *Kenebunch*, which is in  
the Province of *Main*, not far from the  
River-side, a piece of clay ground was  
thrown up by a mineral vapour (as was  
supposed) over the tops of high oaks that  
grew between it and the River, into the  
River, stopping the course thereof, and  
leaving a hole Forty yards square, wherein  
were



*Clay  
Bullets*

were Thousands of clay bullets as big as musquet bullets, and pieces of clay in the like the barrel of a musquet. The accident fell out at *Casco*, One and two miles from it to the Eastward, much at the same time; And fish in some ponds the Countrey thrown up dead upon banks, supposed likewise to be kill'd by mineral vapours.

*This is hard  
to believe*

A wonderful number of Herrins catch'd on shore at high water in *Black-point* Harbour in the province of *Maine*, so that they might have gone half way the leg in the for a mile together.

Mr. *Thatcher* chosen Pastor of the Presbyterian Church at *Boston*.

1671.

Mr. *Thomas Prince* Governour of the *Plymouth* colony.

Mr. *Richard Bellingham* chosen Governour of the *Massachusetts* colony, Mr. *Leche* Deputy, and major General.

Elder *Pen* now dyed at *Boston*, the English troubled much with griping of the stomach and bloody Flux, of which several dyed.

October the Two and twentieth a Ship called the flying *Falcon* of *Amsterdam*, arriv'd at *Dover*, having been out since the first of *January* 1669. and been in the South

(279)

Sea in the latitude of 50 degrees, having  
sailed 12900 Dutch leagues, the master told  
The he made main land, and discovered two  
and two islands never before discovered, where  
much were men all hairy, Eleven foot in height. *Dutch lie*

1672.

Mr. Richard Bellingham chosen Governour  
of the Massachusetts colony, Mr. Leveret  
Deputy, and major General.

1673.

Mr. Richard Bellingham Governour of  
the Massachusetts colony now deceased.

1674.

Thomas Leveret chosen Governour.  
Mr. Simons Deputy Governour.

*the colour of Negroes — 187*

*Nova Scotia was sold by the Lord  
Barling to the French & is now*

**FINIS.**

*Wholey in their Possession 1673  
Treaty By the advantageous Peace 1763  
all Canada, Nova Scotia & Cape Breton  
are yield to us.*

• Books Printed for Giles Widdows,  
Green-Dragon in St-Pauls-Church

*In Folio.*

**D**R. *Homes* his *Miscellanea*, consisting of three Treatises, 1. Exercitations touching the glorious Kingdom of Christ on earth yet to come, 2. A review of, or an enquiry after Gog and Magog, who shall find them. 3. Some glimpse of the call approaching from Scripture, in a brief Chronologic of 15 years last past the disputes of 300 Jewish Rabbies.

*Mr. Davises* three books belonging to Uniformity in Churches, in which distinct things, of the laws of Nature Nations, and of the Divine law, concerning the consistency of the Ecclesiastical Estate, with the civil are unfolded.

A Book of the five senses, in copper cuts

*In Quarto.*

*Dr. Sibbs* Light from Heaven in 4 Treatises  
*Mr. Birtons* Remedy for *Londons* languishing Trade.

The younger Brothers Apologie, for Fathers free power in disposing of Land to his Son, Sons, or any of them



Octavo.

Mr. Stucleys Gospel-glass, Representing the miscarriages of English Professors.

Mr. Gales Anatomy of Infidelity.

Mr. Prestons Directions for true spelling, with Copies of Letters, Bills of Parcels, Bills of Exchange, Bills of Debt, Receipts, with Rules and helps thereunto.

Val. Martialis Spectaculorum Liber, Paraphrased.

The true English Interest, or an account of the chief national Improvement, in some political observations, demonstrating an Insallible Advance of this Nation to infinite wealth and greatness, Trade and Populacy, with Employment, and Preferment for all persons, by Carew Reynel Esq; New-Englands Rarities discovered in Birds, Beasts, Fishes, Serpents, and plants of that Countrey; Together with the Physical and Chirurgical Remedies, wherewith the Natives constantly use to cure their distempers, wounds and sores. Also a description of an Indian Squa, in all her Bravery, with a Poem not improperly confer'd upon her, Illustrated with cuts, by F. F. felin, Gent.

In 12. and 24. &c.

Dr. Collets Devotions, or the Christians morning and evening Sacrifice digested into

into prayers and meditations, with  
short directions for a godly life.

How to revive the Golden Age, with  
true causes of the want of money,  
good Trading in these Kingdoms,  
how yet to Remedy them, and to make  
these Kingdoms exceed all others in Rich-  
es and power, Humbly presented to  
Parliament.

*Advertisement.*

Dr. Buckworths Lozenges, famous for the  
cure of Consumptions, Coughs, Catarrhs,  
Asthmas, Phthisicks, and all other diseases  
incident to the Lungs, colds new and old,  
Hoarseness, shortness of breath, and flux  
pages of the Stomach; Also a Sovereign  
Antidote against the Plague.

His Homogeneal Pill.

Dr. Lockers Universal Pill.

Constant. Rhodocanaces Spirit of Salt.

† Spanish cases for Bibles, and Common  
Prayer of all sorts, sold by Giles Widdowes  
Book-seller at the Green-Dragon in  
Pauls Church-yard.

† Since I remember Every Bible &  
Prayer Book had a cover of Black  
or Red Leather, but had now the cover  
from 1700 to 1710 or 20 of Collinson  
F. R. S.

*New-Englands*  
**RARITIES**  
**Discovered:**

**IN**  
*Birds, Beasts, Fishes, Serpents,*  
and *Plants* of that Country.

Together with  
The *Physical* and *Chyrurgical* REMEDIES  
wherewith the *Natives* constantly use to  
Cure their DISTEMPERS, WOUNDS,  
and SORES.

ALSO  
A perfect Description of an *Indian SQUA*,  
in all her Bravery; with a POEM not  
improperly conferr'd upon her.

LASTLY  
A CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE  
of the most remarkable Passages in that  
Country amongst the ENGLISH.

---

*Illustrated with CUTS.*

---

By JOHN JOSSELYN, Gent.

London, Printed for G. Widdowes at the  
Green Dragon in St. Pauls Church-yard, 1672.





To the highly obliging ,  
His honoured Friend and Kinsman ,  
**SAMUEL FORTREY Esq;**

SIR,

IT was by your assistance (enabling  
me) that I commenc'd a Voy-  
age into those remote parts of the  
World (known to us by the painful  
Discovery of that memorable Gentle-  
man Sir Fran. Drake.) Your bounty  
then and formerly hath engaged a re-  
tribution of my Gratitude, and not  
knowing how to testifie the same unto  
you otherways, I have (although  
with some reluctancy) adventured to  
intrude upon you these rude and in-  
digest Eight Tears Observations,  
wherein whether I shall more shame  
my self or injure your accurate Judg-  
ment and better Employment in the  
General, is a question.

A 3

We

## Epistle Dedicatory.

We read of Kings and Gods that  
kindly took  
A Pitcher fill'd with Water from  
the Brook.

*The Contemplation whereof (knowing your noble and generous Disposition) hath confirm'd in me the hope that you will pardon my presumption and accept the tender of the fruit of my Travel after this homely manner, and my self as,*

*Sir,*

*Your highly obliged,*

*&*

*most humble Servant,*

*John Jossely*



*New-Englands*  
**RARITIES**  
 Discovered.

IN the year of our Lord 1663. *May*  
 28. upon an Invitation from my only  
 Brother, I departed from *London*, and  
 arrived at *Boston*, the chief Town in  
 the *Massachusetts*, a Colony of *English-*  
*men* in *New-England*, the 2<sup>th</sup> of *July*  
 following.

*Boston* (whose longitude is 315 deg. and  
 42 deg. 30 min. of North Latitude) is  
 built on the South-west side of a Bay  
 large enough for the Anchorage of 500  
 Sail of Ships, the Buildings are handsome,  
 joyning one to the other as in *London*, with  
 many large streets, most of them paved  
 with pebble stone, in the high street to-  
 wards the Common there are fair Buildings  
 some of stone, and at the East End of the

A 4 Town



## 2 New-Englands Rarities.

Town one amongst the rest, built by the  
Shore by Mr. *Gibbs* a Merchant, being  
stately Edifice, which it is thought will  
stand him in little less than 3000 *l.* before  
it be fully finished. The Town is not di-  
vided into Parishes, yet they have three  
fair Meeting-houses or Churches, which  
hardly suffice to receive the Inhabitants  
and Strangers that come in from all parts.

Having refreshed my self here for some  
time, and opportunely lighting upon a  
passage in a Bark belonging to a Friend  
of my Brothers, and bound to the East-  
ward, I put to sea again, and on the Eigh-  
teenth of *August* I arrived at *Black-point*,  
otherwise called *Scarborow*, the habitation  
of my beloved Brother, being about an  
hundred leagues to the Eastward of *Boston*.  
here I resided eight years, and made it my  
business to discover all along the Natural  
Physical, and Chyrurgical Rarities of this  
New-found World.

*New-England* is said to begin at 40 and  
to end at 46 of Northerly Latitude, that  
is from *de la Ware Bay* to *New-found-  
Land*. *Pensilvania*

The Sea Coasts are accounted whole-  
somest, the East and South Winds coming  
from

+ no mention of *Pensilvania* & being  
Then a *Terra incognita*

mile  
300 —

New-Englands Rarities. 3

Sea produceth warm weather, the  
Northwest coming over land causeth ex-  
tremity of Cold, and many times strikes  
Inhabitants both *English* and *Indian*  
with that sad Disease called there the  
ague of the Back, but with us *Em-*  
*ma.*

The Country generally is Rocky and  
mountainous, and extremely overgrown  
with wood, yet here and there beautified  
with large rich Valleys, wherein are Lakes  
and twenty, yea sixty miles in compass,  
out of which our great Rivers have their  
beginnings.

Fourscore miles (upon a direct line) to  
the Northwest of *Scarborow*, a Ridge of  
Mountains run Northwest and Northeast  
about a hundred Leagues, known by the name  
of the *White Mountains*, upon which lieth  
snow all the year, and is a Land-mark  
twenty miles off at Sea. It is rising ground  
from the Sea shore to these Hills, and they  
are inaccessible but by the Gullies which  
the dissolved Snow hath made; in these  
Gullies grow *Saven* Bushes, which being  
taken hold of are a good help to the  
climbing Discoverer; upon the top of the  
highest of these Mountains is a large Level  
or

*White Mountains*

*Saven Bushes*

#### 4 New-Englands Rarities.

or Plain of a days journey over, where  
on nothing grows but Moss; at the far  
end of this Plain is another Hill call  
the Sugar-loaf, to outward appearanc  
rude heap of massie stones piled one  
another, and you may as you ascend  
from one stone to another, as if you  
going up a pair of stairs, but winding  
about the Hill till you come to the top  
which will require half a days time,  
yet it is not above a Mile, where there  
also a Level of about an Acre of ground  
with a pond of clear water in the middle  
of it, which you may hear run down  
but how it ascends is a mystery. From  
this rocky Hill you may see the whole  
Country round about; it is far above the  
lower Clouds, and from hence we beheld  
a Vapour (like a great Pillar) drawn up  
the Sun Beams out of a great Lake or Pond  
into the Air, where it was formed into  
a Cloud. The Country beyond these  
Hills Northward is daunting terrible, being  
full of rocky Hills, as thick as Mole-hills  
in a Meadow, and cloathed with infinite  
thick Woods.

New-England is by some affirmed to be  
an Island, bounded on the North with the  
River

*Sugar-loaf*

*Hill had*

*on top a*

*Round Spring*

*an*

*innumbr*

*of Rocks*

*above the*

*Clouds*

*Water's bout*  
*seen after*  
*at sea*

*Smooth*  
*Mountains*



# New-Englands Rarities. 5

River Canada (so called from Monsieur  
(one) on the South with the River Mo-  
nahan or Hudsons River, so called because  
he was the first that discovered it. Some  
will have America to be an Island, which  
of question must needs be, if there  
be a Northeast passage found out into the  
North Sea; it contains 1152400000 Acres.  
The discovery of the Northwest passage  
which lies within the River of Canada)  
was undertaken with the help of some  
Protestant Frenchmen, which left Canada  
and retired to Boston about the year 1669.  
The Northeast people of America, i.e. New-  
England, &c. are judged to be Tartars cal-  
led Samoades, being alike in complexion,  
shape, habit and manners, (see the Globe : )  
their Language is very significant, using  
but few words, every word having a diverse  
signification, which is exprest by their ge-  
stures; as when they hold their head of one  
side the word signifieth one thing, holding  
it with their hand up when they pronounce it sig-  
nifieth another thing. Their Speeches in their  
Assemblies are very gravely delivered, com-  
monly in perfect Hexameter Verse, with  
great silence and attention, and answered  
again *ex tempore* after the same manner.

is found

1669  
French  
men

no

likest for  
by his dect  
the Indians  
are Tall and  
Haudsome  
to his 124  
as the  
Samoades  
are not  
black nor  
nary people

In His Time It was known  
the Continent of Asia & America joined  
but the late Russian Discoveries show they  
are at a great Distance

## 6 New-Englands Rarities.

Having given you some short Notice concerning the Country in general, I now enter upon the proposed Discovery of the Natural, Physical, and Chyrurgical Rarities; and that I may methodically deliver them unto you, I shall cast them in this form: 1. Birds. 2. Beasts. 3. Fishes. 4. Serpents and Insects. 5. Plants, of which 1. such Plants as are common with us, 2. such Plants as are proper to the Country, 3. of such Plants as are proper to the Country and have no name known to us, 4. of such Plants as have sprung up in the *English* Planted and kept Cattle, 5. of such Garden Herbs (amongst which as do thrive there and of such as do not), 6. Of Stones, Minerals, Metals, and Earths.

### First, Of Birds.

#### *The Humming Bird.*

**T**he *Humming Bird*, the least of all Birds, little bigger than a *Dor*, of variable glittering Colours, they feed upon Honey, which they suck out of Blossoms.

# New-Englands Rarities. 7

Flowers with their long Needle-like  
; they sleep all Winter, and are not to  
seen till the Spring, at which time they  
in little Nests made up like a bottom  
soft Silk-like matter, their Eggs no  
ger than a white Pease, they hatch three  
our at a time, and are proper to this  
country.

*The Troculus. a species Martin or*

The Troculus, a small Bird, black and  
ite, no bigger than a Swallow, the  
ints of whole Feathers are sharp, which  
they stick into the sides of the Chymney  
rest themselves, their Legs being ex-  
ending (short) where they breed in Nests  
like a Swallows Nest, but of  
ewy substance, and which is not fastened  
the Chymney as a Swallows Nest, but  
ags down the Chymney by a clew-like  
ing a yard long. They commonly have  
or five young ones, and when they  
away, which is much about the time  
at Swallows use to depart, they never  
to throw down one of their young  
ards into the room by way of Gratitude.  
have more than once observed, that against  
the ruin of the Family these Birds will sud-  
only forsake the house and come no more.

*swallow*

*is fastened  
with a*

*valgar-  
emors*

*This Swallows Nest is made  
with the smallest Twigs in Basket with  
tossed with a glass of the worst Spirit  
in oil curious to see*



### 8 New-Englands Rarities

*This Noble Bird I take to be What is  
Called the Bald Eagle*

*The Pilhannaw.*

*Some White* The Pilhannaw or Mechquan, much  
the description of the Indian Ruck, a  
Head - strous great Bird, a kind of Hawk,  
*I have seen* say an Eagle, four times as big as a  
*It always* hawk, white Mail'd, having two or  
*I saw no more* purple Feathers in her head as long  
Feathers the Quills of these Feathers are purple  
or several big as Swans Quills and transparent;  
that was Head is as big as a Childs of a year  
brought all sort of feathered Creatures hide  
ourselves, yet she never preys upon any  
see them, but upon Fawns and Jaccals;  
5. pt. p. 55 Ayries in the Woods upon the high  
of Ossapy, and is very rarely or seldom  
seen.

### *The Turkie.*

The Turkie, who is blacker than  
I have heard several credible persons  
they have seen Turkie Cocks that  
weighed forty, yea sixty pound; but  
of my personal experimental knowledge  
I can assure you, that I have eaten  
share of a Turkie Cock, that when  
was pull'd and garbidge'd, weighed the

*40 or 50*

*Turkey  
30 lb*

## New-Englands Rarities. 9

ound, and I have also seen three-score  
flocks of young *Turkies* on the side of a  
marsh, sunning of themselves in a mor-  
ning betimes, but this was thirty years  
since, the *English* and the *Indian* having now  
destroyed the breed, so that 'tis very rare  
to meet with a wild *Turkie* in the Woods;  
some of the *English* bring up great  
flocks of the wild kind, which remain about  
the Houses as tame as ours in *England*.

### The Goose.

The *Goose*, of which there are three  
kinds; the *Gray Goose*, the *White Goose*,  
and the *Brant*: The *Goose* will live a long  
time, I once found in a *White Goose* three  
years old, she was a very old one, and so  
that we gladly gave her over although  
not well roasted.

### The Bloody-Flux Cured.

A Friend of mine of good Quality li-  
veth sometime in *Virginia* was sore trou-  
bled for a long time with the *Bloody-Flux*,  
and tried several Remedies by the  
advise of his Friends without any good  
effect, at last was induced with a long-  
standing desire to drink the Fat Dripping

3  
Hearts  
of  
Goose  
for  
Bloody Flux

10 *New-Englands Rarities.*

of a Goose newly taken from the Fire which absolutely cured him, who was despair of ever recovering his health again.

*The Gripe and Vulture.*

The *Gripe*, which is of two kinds, the one with a white Head, the other with black Head, this we take for the *Vulture*. They are both cowardly *Kites*, prey upon Fish cast up on the shore. In the year 1668. there was a great mortality of Eels in *Casco Bay*, thither resort at the same time an infinite number of *Gripes*, insomuch that being shot by Inhabitants, they fed their Hogs with them for some weeks; at other times you seldom see above two or three in a dozen miles travelling. The Quill Feathers of their Wings make excellent Text Paper and the Feathers of their Tail are highly esteemed by the *Indians* for their Arrows; they will not sing in flying; a *Gripe* is worth a *Beavers Skin* up in the Country.

*A Remedy for the Coldness and pain of the Stomach.*

The Skin of a *Gripe* drest with the Onion, is good to wear upon the Stomach the Pain and Coldness of it.

Mortality

+

+



New-Englands Rarities. II

*The Osprey. Sea Eagle*

The Osprey, which in this Country is  
white mail'd.

*A Remedy for the Tooth-ach.*

Their Beaks excell for the Tooth-ach,  
bitting the Gums therewith till they  
bleed.

*The Wobble. Speer'd Parrot.*

The Wobble, an ill shaped Fowl, having  
long Feathers in their Pinions, which is  
reason they cannot fly, not much unlike  
Penguin; they are in the Spring very  
fat, or rather oily, but pull'd and gar-  
d, and laid to the Fire to roast, they +  
do not one drop.

*For Aches.*

For way (for they are very soveraign  
Aches) is to make Mummy of them,  
is, to salt them well, and dry them  
in earthen pot well glazed in an Oven;  
the (which is the better way) to burn  
under ground for a day or two, then  
stew them and stew them in a Tin Stew-  
with a very little water.

B

The

## The Loone.

The Loone is a Water Fowl, alike  
shape to the Wobble, and as virtual  
Aches, which we order after the fa  
manner.

## The Owl.

The Owl, *Avis devia*, which an  
three kinds, the great Gray Owl  
Ears, the little Gray Owl, and the  
Owl which is no bigger than a Thrush

*But they have a great White Owl*

## The Turkie Buzzard.

The Turkie Buzzard, a kind of  
but as big as a Turkie, brown of co  
and very good meat. *Others say the*  
*Carrion for it feeds on Carrion*  
What Birds are not to be found in  
England.

Now by what the Country hat  
you may ghes at what it hath; it ha  
Nightingals, nor Larks, nor Bull  
nor Sparrows, nor Blackbirds, nor

New-Englands Rarities. 13

nor Jackdaws, nor Popinjays, nor *do I am*  
Rooks, nor Pheasants, nor Woodcocks, nor *for Parol*  
Quails, nor Robins, nor Cuckoos, &c.

Secondly, Of Beasts.

*The Bear, which are generally black.*

The Bear, they live four months in Caves, that is all Winter; in the Spring they bring forth their young ones, they seldom have above three Cubs in a litter, are very fat in the Fall of the Leaf with feeding upon Acorns, at which time they are excellent Venison; their Brains are enormous; they feed much upon water Plantane in the Spring and Summer, and berries, and also upon a shell-fish called a Horse-foot, and are never mankind, i. e. *See more*  
once, but in rutting time, and then they *1st part*  
walk the Country twenty, thirty, forty in company, making a hideous noise with roaring, which you may hear a mile or two before they come so near to endanger the Traveller. About four years since, acorns being very scarce up in the Country, some numbers of them came down *for 91*



14 *New-Englands Rarities.*

amongst the *English* Plantations, which  
generally are by the Sea side; at a  
Town called *Gorgiana* in the Province  
*Meyn* (called also *New-Sommer-set-*  
they kill'd fourscore.

80 Bears  
Killed

*For Aches and Cold Swellings.*

Their Grease is very good for Aches  
and Cold Swellings, the *Indians* anoint  
themselves therewith from top to toe,  
which hardens them against the  
weather. A black Bears Skin heretofore  
was worth forty shillings, now you  
have one for ten, much used by the *English*  
for Beds and Coverlets, and by the *Indians*  
for Coats.

*For pain and lameness upon Cold.*

One *Edw. Andrews* being foxt, and  
ling backward cross a Thought in a  
lop or Fisher-boat, and taking cold  
it, grew crooked, lame, and full of  
was cured, lying one Winter upon  
Skins newly fhead off, with some  
him, so that he sweat every night.

*The Wolf.*

The Wolf, of which there are  
two kinds; one with a round ball'd Foot,

**New-Englands Rarities. 15**

are in shape like mungrel Mastiffs, the other  
with a flat Foot, these are liker Greyhounds,  
and are called *Deer Wolves*, because they  
are accustomed to prey upon *Deer*. A *Wolf*  
will eat a *Wolf* new dead, and so do Bears  
I suppose, for their dead Carcasses are  
never found, neither by the *Indian* nor  
*English*. They go a clicketing twelve days,  
and have as many Whelps at a Litter as a  
Bitch. The *Indian Dog* is a Creature be-  
tween 'twixt a *Wolf* and a *Fox*, which  
the *Indians* lighting upon, bring up to hunt  
the *Deer* with. The *Wolf* is very nume-  
rous, and go in companies, sometimes ten,  
twenty, more or fewer, and so cunning,  
that seldome any are kill'd with Guns or  
Traps; but of late they have invented  
a way to destroy them, by binding four  
Maycril Hooks a cross with a brown  
thread, and then wrapping some Wool  
about them, they dip them in melted Tal-  
low till it be as round and as big as an Egg;  
these (when any Beast hath been kill'd by  
the *Wolves*) they scatter by the dead Car-  
casse, after they have beaten off the  
*Wolves*; about Midnight the *Wolves* are  
drawn to return again to the place where  
they left the slaughtered Beast, and the

*Indian*

*209*

*See Mart*

*on the 10th*

*1st post*

*104 83*

16 *New-Englands Rarities.*

first thing they venture upon will be the  
balls of fat.

*For old Aches.*

A black *Wolfs* Skin is worth a Bear  
Skin among the *Indians*, being highly  
esteemed for helping old Aches in  
people, worn as a Coat; they are  
mankind, as in *Ireland* and other Countries  
but do much harm by destroying of  
*English* Cattle.

*The Ounce.* ~~See Page~~

*Synx* — The *Ounce* or *Wild Cat*, is about  
the bigness of two lusty Ram Cats, prey  
upon Deer and our *English* Poultry.  
I once found six whole Ducks in the  
of one I killed by a Pond side: The  
Flesh roasted is as good as Lamb, and  
white.

*For Aches and shrunk Sinews.*

Their Grease is soveraign for all manner  
of Aches and shrunk Sinews: Their Skin  
are accounted good Fur, but somewhat  
course.



*The Raccoon.*

The *Raccoon* liveth in hollow trees, and is about the size of a *Gib Cat*; they feed upon *Mast*, and do infest our *Indian* Corn very much; they will be exceeding fat in *Autumn*; their flesh is somewhat dark, but good food roasted.

*For Bruises and Aches.*

Their Fat is excellent for Bruises and Aches. Their Skins are esteemed a good deep Fur, but yet as the *Wild Cats* somewhat coarse.

*The Porcupine.*

The *Porcupine* in some parts of the Countrey Eastward, towards the *French*, are as big as an ordinary *Mungrel* *Cat*, *Shoot no* a very angry Creature and dangerous, *Quills* shooting a whole shower of Quills with *all a* rowse at their enemies, which are of *vulgar* that nature, that wherever they stick in the flesh, they will work through in a short time if not prevented by pulling of them out. The *Indians* make use of their Quills, which are hardly a handful long, to adorn *armor*

18 **New-Englands Rarities.**

the edges of their birchen dishes, and weave (dying some of them red, others yellow and blew) curious bags or pouches in works like *Turkie-work*.

*The Beaver, Canis Ponticus, Amphibia*

The *Beaver*, whose old ones are as big as an *Otter*, or rather bigger, a Creature of a rare instinct, as may apparently be seen in their artificial Dam-heads to raise the water in the Ponds where they keep, and their houses having three stories, which would be too large to discourse: They have all of them four Cods hanging outwardly between their hinder legs, two of them are soft or oily, and two solid or hard; the *Indians* say they are *Hermaphrodites*.

*For Wind in the Stomach.*

Their solid Cods are much used in Physick: Our *Engliswomen* in this Country use the powder grated, as much as will ly upon a shilling in a draught of *Fiol Wine* for Wind in the Stomach and Belly, and venture many times in such cases to give it to Women with Child: Their Tails are flat, and covered with Scales without hair, which

New-Englands Rarities. 19

which being flead off, and the Tail boiled,  
proves exceeding good meat, being all  
pouches, and as sweet as Marrow.

The Moose Deer:

*He must mean*  
The Moose Deer, which is a very goodly *12 foot*  
creature, some of them twelve foot high, *High*  
with exceeding fair Horns with broad *Twelve*  
flms, some of them two fathom from *was exact*  
the tip of one Horn to the other; they *in this Medage*  
commonly have three Fawns at a time; *the Horns*  
their flesh is not dry like Deers flesh, but *horn*  
and luscious somewhat like Horse *p: 88*  
meat (as they judge that have tasted of *St. East*  
it) but very wholesome. The flesh of *a High Fast*  
their Fawns is an incomparable dish, be- *for suppers*  
cause the flesh of an Asses Foal so highly  
esteemed by the Romans, or that of young  
Daniel Puppies so much cried up in our  
times in France and England.

Moose Horns better for Physick use than

Harts Horns.

Their Horns are far better (in my opi-  
nion) for Physick than the Horns of other  
Deer, as being of a stronger nature: As *for their*  
for their Claws, which both *Hoofs*  
Englishmen and French make use of for Elk, I cannot  
approve



20 New-Englands Rarities.

approve so to be from the Effects, had some trial of it; besides, all write of the Elk, describe him with of hair on the left Leg behind, a little the pastern joynt on the outside of Leg, not unlike the tuft (as I conceive) that groweth upon the Breast of a Turkey Cock, which I could never yet see on the Leg of a Moose, and I have seen a number of them.

For Children breeding Teeth.

Wives.

The Indian Webbes make use of the broad Teeth of the Fawns to hang about their Childrens Neck when they are young of their Teeth. The Tongue of a grown Moose, dried in the smoak

Since was  
1000 Capan  
1767

the Indian manner, is a dish for a Sagamore.

The Caribo is now well known by the name of the Maccarib. from the French this is the Reine Deer.

The Maccarib, Caribo, or Pohang kind of Deer, as big as a Stag, round hooved, smooth hair'd and soft as the Lion's. Their Horns grow backwards a long way back to their rumps, and turn againe a handful beyond their Nose, having another Horn in the middle of their Forehead about half a yard long, very straight, and

as the author never saw this animal neither could I ever find certain information of it the French account of it is doubtfull

*New-Englands Rarities.* 21  
breathed like an Unicorns Horn, of a  
brown jettie colour, and very smooth:  
The Creature is no where to be found, but  
on Cape Sable in the French Quarters,  
there too very rarely, they being not  
common; some few of their Skins and  
straight Horns are (but very sparing-  
ly) brought to the English.

*The Fox.*

The Fox, which differeth not much  
from ours, but are somewhat less; a black  
Skin heretofore was wont to be valued  
at fifty and sixty pound, but now you  
may have them for twenty shillings; in-  
deed there is not any in New-England  
that are perfectly black, but silver hair'd,  
that is sprinkled with grey hairs. *and these*  
*is Red Foxes.*  
*The Jaccal. the Raccone*

The Jaccal, is a Creature that hunts  
the Lions prey, a shrew'd sign that there  
are Lions upon the Continent; there are  
those that are yet living in the Countrey,  
that do constantly affirm, that about six  
or seven and thirty years since an Indian

*Shor ad Lynx*  
*is a lion (Shor is a large animal by*  
*which that never saw a lion be taken for one*

## 22 New-Englands Rarities.

This was  
a young  
Lynx  
which may  
be taken  
for a Lion  
by those  
near the  
one being  
of a brown colour

shot a young *Lion*, sleeping upon the bough  
of an Oak blown up by the roots, with  
an Arrow, not far from Cape Anne, and gave  
the Skin to the English. But to say  
nothing of the *Jacal*, they are ordina-  
rily less than *Foxes*, of the colour of a  
*Rabbit*, and do not scent nothing  
strong as a *Fox*; some of the *Indians*  
eat of them: Their Grease is good for  
that *Fox* Grease is good for, but weaker  
they are very numerous.

### The Hare.

Changes  
White

The Hare in New-England is no bigger  
than our English Rabbits, of the same  
colour, but withall having yellow  
black strokes down the ribs; in Winter  
they are milk white, and as the Spring  
approacheth they come to their colour  
when the Snow lies upon the ground they  
are very bitter with feeding upon the bark  
of Spruce, and the like.

It is Doubtful if there is a *Lion* in  
any part of America — Thirdly,  
There is an animal called a  
*Lion* in the *Brazils* — but then  
He is said not to like the African  
*Lion* — but in *Colours*



Thirdly, Of Fishes.

Pliny and Isadore write there are not above 144 Kinds of Fishes, but to knowledge there are nearer 300: I suppose America was not known to Pliny Isadore.

Catalogue of Fish, that is, of those that are to be seen between the English Coast and America, and those proper to the Countrey.

Starling.

Salmon, Alewife, because great bellied;

Classe, Oldwife, Allow.

Shorva or Sea Minnow.

Spot.

Core.

able.

riacha.

racountha, a Fish peculiar to the West-

Indies.

article.

asse.

na Bishop, proper to the Norway Seas.

River

24 New-Englands Rarities.

*River Bleak* or *Bley*, a *River Swallow*.

*Sea Bleak* or *Bley*, or *Sea Camelion*.

*Blew Fish* or *Hound Fish*, two kinds,

*kled Hound Fish*, and *blew Hound*

called *Horse Fish*.

*Bonito* or *Dozado*, or *Spanish Dolphin*.

*River Bream*.

*Sea Bream*.

*Cud Bream*.

*Bullhead* or *Indian Muscle*.

*River Bulls*.

*Burfish*.

*Burret*.

*Cackarel* or *Laxe*.

*Calemarie* or *Sea Clerk*.

*Catfish*.

*Carp*.

*Chare*, a Fish proper to the *River Wym* in *Lancashire*.

*Sea Chough*.

*Chub* or *Chevin*.

*Cony Fish*.

*Clam* or *Clamp*.

*Sea Cob*.

*Cockes*, or *Coccles*, or *Coquil*.

*Cook Fish*.

*Rock Cod*.

*Sea Cod* or *Sea Whiting*.

North-Englands Rarities. 25

divers kinds, as the *Sea Crab*, *Boat-*  
*River Crab*, *Sea Lion*, &c.

*Cucumber.*

*Sea Eel.*

*Sea Roach.*

*Post, or Lacquey of the Sea.*

*or Torpedo.*

*or Sleeves, or Sea Angler.*

*the Tunnies enemy.*

*Curnet.*

*or Horned Fish.*

*Dave, or Dart.*

*Dart, Javelins.*

*or Tubarone.*

*Goldfish.*

*Gilt pole, or Godline, Yellow-*

*Dragon or Sea Spider, Quaviner.*

*a Fish frequent in the West Indies.*

*Emperor or Sword Fish.*

*of which divers kinds.*

*Elephant, the Leather of this Fish will*

*never rot, excellent for Thongs.*

*of the Sea.*

*Fish.*

*Flounder*



26 New-Englands Rarities.

Flounder or Flook, the young ones are called Dabs.

Sea Flounder or Flowre.

Sea Fox.

Frogfish.

Frostfish.

Fratola, a broad plain Fish with a like a half Moon.

Sea Flea.

Gallyfish.

Grandpiss or Herring Hog, this, as all of extraordinary size, are accounted Regal Fishes.

Grayling.

Greedigut.

Groundling.

Gudgin.

Gulf.

Sea Grape.

Gull.

Gurnard.

Hake.

Haccl or Sticklebacks.

Haddock.

Horse Foot or Asses Hoof.

Herring.

Hallibut or Sea Pheasant. Some will the Turbut all one, others distine

New-Englands Rarities. 27

them, calling the young Fish of the  
first *Buttis*, and of the other *Birt*.  
There is no question to be made of it  
but that they are distinct kinds of Fish.

*the Hare.*

*the Hawk.*

*the Hermit.*

*the Hermit.*

*the Hermit.*

*the Hind.*

*the Hornbeak, Sea Ruff and Reeves.*

*the Horseman.*

*the Flying Fish.*

*the Kite or Flying Swallow.*

*the Lampret or Lamprel.*

*the Lampreys or Lamprones.*

*the Lamp.*

*the Sea Beef; the smaller sort is called*

*Cusk.*

*the Lanthorn.*

*the Liver.*

*the Lister.*

*the Lizard.*

*the Locusts.*

*the Lump, Poddle, or Sea Owl.*

*the Lunter.*

*the Lux, peculiar to the River Rhyne.*

*the Lights.*

C

Luna,

28 **New-Englands Rarities.**

*Luna*, a very small Fish, but exceeding beautiful, broad bodied and blewish colour; when it swims, the Fins make a Circle like the Moon.

*Maycril.*

*Maid.*

*Manatee.*

*Mola*, a Fish like a lump of Flesh, in the Venetian Sea.

*Millers Thumb*, *Mulcet* or *Pollard*.

*Molefish.*

*Minnow*, called likewise a *Pink*; the name is given to young *Salmon*; called also a *Wistlin*.

*Monkefish.*

*Morse*, River or *Sea Horse*, fresh water.

*Mullet.*

*Sea Mullet*, *Botargo* or *Pefargo* is made of their Spawn.

*Muscle*, divers kinds.

*Navelfish.*

*Nunfish.*

*Needlefish.*

*Sea Nettle.*

*Oyster.*

*Occulata.*

*Perch* or *River Partridge.*

*Pollack.*



# New-Englands Rarities. 29

Tiger or Gavefish.

Crinwig.

Periwinkle or Sea Snail or Whelk.

Pike, or Fresh-water Wolf, or River Wolf,

Luce and Lucerne, which is an overgrown Pike.

Halibut, when they are dried as Red Herrings they are called Fumadoes.

Sea Fish.

Widgeon or Sea Sparrow.

Widgeon or Pour-Contrel.

Widgeon or Porpiss, Molebut, Sea Hog,

Sea Marinus, Turfion.

Sea Fish or Sea Priest.

Widgeon or Crangone.

Widgeon.

Widgeon.

Widgeon, the Feathered Fish, or Fork Fish.

Widgeon.

Widgeon or Indian Reversus, like an Eel,

having a Skin on the hinder part of her

Head, like a Purse, with strings, which

will open and shut.

Widgeon.

Widgeon.

Widgeon.

Widgeon, or Suck Stone, or Stop Ship.

Widgeon.

# 30 New-Englands Rarities.

Roch or Roach.

Rochet or Rauger.

Ruff or Pope.

Sea Ram.

Salmon.

Sailfish.

Scalope or Venus Ceecke.

Scate, or Ray, or Griftlefish; of which  
vers kinds, as sharp snowed Ray, Ray,  
Ray, &c.

Shad.

Shallow.

Sharpling.

Spurling.

Sculpin.

Sheephead.

Soles, or Tonguefish, or Sea Capon, or  
Partridge.

Seal, or Soil, or Zeal.

Sea Calf, and (as some will have it)  
but.

Sheathfish.

Sea Scales.

Sturgeon, of the Roe of this Fish to  
make Caviare or Cavialtic.

Shark or Bunch, several kinds.

Smelt.

Spaccot.

Shrim

New-Englands Rarities. 31

Shrimp.

Squid.

Sturgeon.

Crab.

Wharfegfish.

Quill.

Quid.

Whiche.

ey, R.

Starfish.

Starfish.

Seab.

Hornback or Neptunes Beard.

Thunnie, they cut the Fish in pieces like shingles and powder it, and this they call *Melandria*.

Sea Toad.

Tortoise, Torteise, Tortuga, Tortisse, Turtle or Turtle, of divers kinds.

Trout.

Whbut.

Sea Tun.

Sea Tree.

Oraniscopus.

Platise or Sawfish, having a Saw in his Forehead three foot long, and very sharp.

Umber.

Sea Urchin.

Sea



32 *New-Englands Rarities.*

*Sea Unicorn or Sea Mononeros.*

*Whale*, many kinds.

*Whiting or Merling*, the young ones  
called *Weerlings* and *Mops*.

*Whore.*

*Tardfish, Asses Prick or Shamefish.*

*The Sturgeon.*

The *Sturgeon*, of whose Sounds is made  
Ilinglass, a kind of Glew much used in  
Phylick : This Fish is here in great plenty  
and in some Rivers so numerous, that it is  
hazardous for Canoes and the like small  
Vessels to pass to and again, as in *Pechipscot*  
River to the Eastward.

*The Cod.*

The *Cod*, which is a staple Commodity  
in the Country.

*To stop Fluxes of Blood.*

In the Head of this Fish is found a Stone  
or rather a Bone, which being pulverized  
and drank in any convenient liquor, will  
stop Womens overflowing Courses notori-  
ously : Likewise,

*New-Englands Rarities.* 33

*For the Stone.*

There is a Stone found in their Bellies,  
a Bladder against their Navel, which  
being pulveriz'd and drank in White-wine  
or Ale, is present Remedy for the  
Stone.

*To heal a green Cut:*

About their Fins you may find a kind  
Lowse, which healeth a green Cut in  
short time.

restore them that have melted their  
Grease.

Their Livers and Sounds eaten, is a good  
medicine for to restore them that have  
lost their Grease.

*The Dogfish.*

The Dogfish, a ravenous Fish.

*For the Toothach.*

Upon whose Back grows a Thorn two  
three Inches long, that helps the Tooth-  
ach, scarifying the Gums therewith.

Their Skins are good to cover Boxes and  
Instrument Cases.

*The Stingray.*

The *Stingray*, a large Fish, of a rough Skin, good to cover Boxes and Hatts, Knives, and Rapier sticks. *with his Sting*

*or Dart he wounds Dangerously*

*The Tortons.*

The *Turtle* or *Tortons*, of which there are three kinds: 1. The Land *Turtle*; they are found in dry sandy Banks, under old Houses, and never go into the water.

For the *Ptifick*, *Consumption*, and *Morbus Gallicus*.

They are good for the *Ptifick* and *Consumptions*, and some say the *Morbus Gallicus*.

2. The River *Turtle*, which are venomous and stink.

3. The *Turtle* that lives in Lakes and is called in *Virginia* a *Terrapine*.

*The Soile.*

*Seale* or The *Soile* or *Sea Calf*, a Creature that brings forth her young ones upon dry land, but at other times keeps in the Sea preying upon Fish.



New-Englands Rarities. 35

For Scalds and Burns, and for the Mother.

The Oyl of it is much used by the Indians, who eat of it with their Fish, and anoint their limbs therewith, and their Wounds and Sores: It is very good for Scalds and Burns; and the fume of it, being cast upon Coals, will bring Women out of the Mother Fits. The Hair upon the young ones is white, and as soft as Milk; their Skins, with the Hair on, are good to make Gloves for the Winter.

*The Sperma Ceti Whale.*

The *Sperma Ceti Whale* differeth from the *Whales* that yield us *Whale-bones*, for the first hath great and long Teeth, the other is nothing but Bones with Tassels hanging from their Jaws, with which they suck in their prey. *He forgets. A hark Teeth milt*

*What Sperma Ceti is. Lower Jaw*

It is not long since a *Sperma Ceti Whale* or two were cast upon the shore, not far from *Boston* in the *Massachusetts Bay*, which being cut into small pieces and boiled in Cauldrons, yielded plenty of Oyl; the Oyl put up into Hogsheads, and stow'd into Cellars for some time, Candies at the bottom,

### 36 New-Englands Rarities.

bottom, it may be one quarter; then the Oyl is drawn off, and the Candied Stuff put up into convenient Vessels is sold for *Sperma Ceti*, and is right *Sperma Ceti*.

*For Bruises and Aches.*

The Oyl that was drawn off Candles again and again, if well ordered; and is admirable for Bruises and Aches.

*What Ambergreece is.*

Now you must understand this. *Whale* feeds upon *Ambergreece*, as is apparent finding it in the *Whales* Maw in great quantity, but altered and excrementitious. I conceive that *Ambergreece* is no other than a kind of Mushroom growing at the bottom of some Seas; I was once shewed (by a Mariner) a piece of *Ambergreece* having a root to it like that of the land Mushroom, which the *Whale* breaking up, soon escape his devouring Paunch, and is afterwards cast upon shore. *no certainty*

*is yett known of its Origin, but many Conjectures*

*The Coccle.*

A kind of *Coccle*, of whose Shell the *Indians* make their Beads called *Wompam* peag and *Mohaicks*, the first are white, the other blew, both Orient, and beautified

New-Englands Rarities. 37

with a purple Vein. The white  
are very good to stanch Blood.

*The Scarlet Muscle. The Tyrians  
collected their Purple dye from the  
Scarlet Muscle, at Paschatamiey a  
plantation about fifty leagues by Sea East-  
ward from Boston, in a small Cove called  
Wachusett Cove there is found this kind of  
Muscle which hath a purple Vein, which  
when prickt with a Needle, yieldeth a per-  
fect purple or scarlet juice, dying Linnen  
tissues that no washing will wear it out, but  
keeps its lustre many years: We mark  
Handkerchiefs and Shirts with it.*

*of greatest Esteem in the West-Indies.*

The Indians of Peru esteem of three  
kinds more than any other, viz. the Sea  
Turtle, the Tubaron, and the Manate  
Sea Cow; but in New-England the In-  
dians have in greatest request, the Bass,  
the Sturgeon, the Salmon, the Lamprey, the  
Frost-fish, the Lobster and the

*Clam a little Fish a Cockle species*

Fourthly,



Fourthly, Of Serpents, and  
Insects.

*is The Bull Frog or The Pond Frog.*  
*So called from the noise it makes*  
*like that*

**T**He Pond Frog, which chirp in  
 Spring like Sparrows, and croak  
 Toads in Autumn: some of these  
 they set upon their breech are a Foot high.  
 the Indians will tell you, that up in  
 Country there are Pond Frogs as big as  
 Child of a year old. *Imposse on*

*For Burns, Scalds, and Inflammations,*

They are of a glistering brasse colour  
 and very fat, which is excellent for Burns  
 and Scaldings, to take out the Fire, and  
 them, leaving no Scar; and is also  
 good to take away any Inflammation.

## The Rattle Snake.

The Rattle Snake, who poysons with  
 a Vapour that comes thorough two crooked  
 Fangs in their Mouth; the hollow  
 these Fangs are as black as Ink: The  
 Indians, when weary with travelling, will

*He consists of the Noes of 2 Foxes  
 of Frogs together the on the top of the Bird  
 & the other noes like a Bull.*

ake them up with their bare hands, laying  
hold with one hand behind their Head, with  
the other taking hold of their Tail, and  
with their teeth tear off the Skin of their  
backs, and feed upon them alive; which  
they say refresheth them.

For frozen Limbs, Aches, and Bruises.

They have Leafs of Fat in their Bellies,  
which is excellent to annoint frozen Limbs,  
and for Aches and Bruises wondrous sove-  
reign. Their Hearts swallowed fresh is a  
good Antidote against their Venome, and  
their Liver (the Gall taken out) bruised  
and applied to their Bitings is a present  
remedy.

## OF Insects.

### A Bug.

There is a certain kind of Bug like a  
Beetle, but of a glistering brass co-  
lour, with four strong Tinsel Wings;  
their Bodies are full of Corruption or white  
Matter like a Maggot; being dead, and  
kept a while, they will stench odiously;  
they beat the Humming Birds from the  
flowers.

The

*Libellula*  
*dragor*  
*The*

*this curious Nest is like a Cone or Elm  
The Wasp. Cells of a  
The substance in me came from*

The Wasps in this Countrey are  
black and white, breed in Hives made  
a great Pine Apple, their entrance is  
the lower end, the whole Hive is of  
Ash Colour, but of what matter its  
no man knows; Wax it is not, neither  
will it melt nor fry, but will take  
suddenly like Tinder: This they fasten  
a Bow, or build it round about a low Bush  
a Foot from the ground.

*The flying Glowworm.*

The flying Glowworm, flying in the  
Summer Nights like sparks of Fire  
great number; they are common likewise  
in Palestina. *in the Hot year*

*They was plenty in England  
after supper as wee sett with the  
Windows open they came flying  
into the Candles & caught many  
at Mill Mill in Hindon Middlsex  
I never saw them before a son  
of Snap the Buttle of Collinson*



Fifthly, Of Plants.

AND

Of such Plants as are common with  
us in ENGLAND.

Hedhog-grass.

Mattweed.

Cats-tail.

Stichwort, commonly taken here by  
Rural People for Eyebright; it blows in

Blue Flower-de-luce; the roots are not  
fleshy, but long and streight, and very  
brittle, with a multitude of strings.

To provoke Vomit and for Bruises.

This excellent for to provoke Vomiting,  
and for Bruises on the Feet or Face. They  
blossom in June, and grow upon dry sandy  
Grounds as well as in low wet Grounds.

Yellow bastard Daffodill; it flowereth  
in May, the green leaves are spotted with  
black spots.

Dogstones, a kind of Satyrion, whereof  
there are several kinds groweth in our Salt  
marshes.

T.

what He calls Daffodill is the Tens  
Canis  
the Lutes

To procure Love.

*These Effects  
are sought*

I once took notice of a wanton Woman  
compounding the solid Roots of this Plant  
with Wine, for an Amorous Cup; which  
wrought the desired effect.

*Watercresses.*

Red Lillies grow all over the Country  
innumerable amongst the small Buttes  
and flower in June. *but different*

*Wild Sorrel. from our garden*

Alders Tongue comes not up till June  
I have found it upon dry hilly grounds  
in places where the water hath stood  
Winter, in August, and did then make  
Oyntment of the Herb new gathered  
the fairest Leaves grow amongst the  
Hawthorne Bushes, that are plentiful  
growing in such hollow places.

*One Blade*

*Pulana* Lilly Convallie, with the yellow Flowers,  
grows upon rocky banks by the Sea.

Water Plantane, here called Water  
Suck-leaves.

For Burns and Scalds, and to draw Water  
out of Swell'd Legs.

It is much used for Burns and Scalds,  
to draw water out of swell'd Legs.  
feed much upon this Plant, so do the  
Deer.

New-Englands Rarities. 43

*Sea Plantane*; three kinds.

*Small-water Archer*.

*Autumn Bell Flower*.

*White Hellibore*, which is the first Plant  
that springs up in this Country, and the  
first that withers; it grows in deep black  
mould and Wet, in such abundance, that  
you may in a small compass gather whole  
cart-loads of it.

*Wounds and Aches Cured by the Indians*.

*For the Tooth-ach. For Herpes miliaris.*

The Indians Cure their Wounds with  
annointing the Wound first with Rac-  
cons greese, or Wild-Cats greese, and  
strewing upon it the powder of the Roots;  
and for Aches they scarifie the grieved part,  
and annoint it with one of the foresaid  
oils, then strew upon it the powder:

The powder of the Root put into a hollow  
Tooth, is good for the Tooth-ach: The  
Root sliced thin and boyled in Vineager, is  
very good against *Herpes Miliaris*.

*Arsmart*, both kinds.

*Spurge Time*; it grows upon dry san-  
dy Sea Banks, and is very like to *Rupter*-  
wort, it is full of Milk.

*Rupter-wort*, with the white flower.

*Jagged Rose-penny-wort*.

D

Soda



44 New-Englands Rarities.

*Soda bariglia*, or *massacote*, the *Almes* of  
Soda, of which they make Glasses.

*Glass-wort*, here called *Berrelia*,  
grows abundantly in Salt Marshes.

*St. John's Wort*.

*St. Peter's Wort*.

*Speed-well Chick-weed*.

*Male fluellin*, or *Speed-well*.

*Upright Peniroyal*.

*Wild-Mint*.

*Cat-Mint*.

*Egrimony*.

The lesser *Clet-Bur*.

*Water Lilly*, with yellow Flowers,  
*Indians* Eat the Roots, which are long  
boiling, they tast like the Liver of a Sheep  
the *Moose Deer* feed much upon them, at  
which time the *Indians* kill them, when  
their heads are under water.

*Dragons*, their leaves differ from  
the kinds with us, they come up  
June. *Arum Beta folio*.

*Violets* of three kinds, the White *Violet*  
which is sweet, but not so strong as the  
Blew *Violets*; Blew *Violets* without sent  
and a Reddish *Violet* without sent; they  
not blow till June.

New-Englands Rarities. 45

For swell'd Legs.

Wood-bine, good for hot swellings of the  
Legs, fomenting with the decoction, and  
applying the Feces in the form of a Cata-  
plasm.

Salomons-Seal, of which there is three  
kinds; the first common in England, the  
second, Virginia Salomons-Seal, and the  
third, differing from both, is called Treacle *a similar*  
Berries, having the perfect tast of Treacle  
when they are ripe; and will keep good  
long while; certainly a very wholesome  
Berry, and medicinable.

Doves-Foot.

Herb Robert.

Knobby Cranes Bill.

For Agues.

Ravens-Claw, which flowers in May;  
is admirable for Agues.

Cinkfoil.

Tormentile.

Avens, with the leaf of Mountane-  
Avens, the flower and root of English  
Avens.

Strawberries.

Wild Angelica, *majoris* and *minoris*.

Alexanders, which grow upon Rocks  
by the Sea Shore.

46 New-Englands Rarities,

*Yarrow*, with the white Flower.

*Columbines*, of a flesh colour, growing upon Rocks.

I could  
not find  
Difference

Oak of *Hierusalem*.

*Achariston* is an excellent Medicine for purging of the Lungs upon Cold, Pitsick,

Oak of *Cappadocia*, both much of a nature, but Oak of *Hierusalem* is stronger

in operation; excellent for stuffing

the Lungs upon Colds, shortness of Wind

and the Pitsick; maladies that the Natives

are often troubled with: I helped several

of the *Indians* with a Drink made of

Gallons of *Molosses wort*, (for in that part

of the Country where I abode, we make

our Beer of *Molosses*, Water, Bran, and

of *Sassafras* Root; and a little *Worm-wood*,

well boiled,) into which I put

Oak of *Hierusalem*, Cat-mint, *Sowthistle*,

of each one handful, of *Enula Campanula*

Root one Ounce, *Liquorice* scrap'd brown

and cut in peices, one Ounce, *Sassafras*

Root cut into thin chips, one Ounce,

*Anny-feed* and sweet *Fennel-feed*, of each

one Spoonful bruised; boil these in a

close Pot, upon a soft Fire to the consumption

of one Gallon, then take it off, and

strain it gently; you may if you will



**New-Englands Rarities. 47**

boil the streined liquor with Sugar to a Syrup, then when it is Cold, put it up into Glas Bottles, and take thereof three or four spoonfuls at a time, letting it run down your throat as leasurely as possibly you can; do thus in the morning, in the Afternoon, and at Night going to bed.

*Goose-Grass; or Clivers.*

*Fearn.*

*Brakes.*

*Wood sorrel, with the yellow flower.*

*Elms.*

*Line Tree, both kinds.*

*A way to draw out Oyl of Akrons, or the like, &c.*

*Maple; of the Ashes of this Tree the Indians make a lye, with which they force out Oyl from Oak Akorns that is highly esteemed by the Indians.*

*Dew-Grass.*

*Earth-Nut, which are of divers kinds, one bearing very beautiful Flowers. the Aprors*

*Fuss-Balls, very large.*

*Mushrooms, some long and no bigger than ones finger, others jagged flat, round, none like our great Mushrooms in England, of these some are of a Scarlet colour, others a deep Yellow, &c.*

*Blew*

48 New-Englands Rarities.

Blew flowered Pimpernel.

*Hepatica* Noble Liver-wort, one sort with white flowers, the other with blew.

Black-Berry.

Dew-Berry.

Rasp-Berry, here called Mul-berry.

Goose-Berries, of a deep red Colour.

Haw-thorn, the Haws being as big as Services, and very good to eat, and not as astringent as the Haws in England.

Toad flax.

Pellamount, or Mountain time.

Mouse-ear Minor.

The making of Oyl of Akrons. To strengthen the weak Members. For Scall'd-heads.

There is Oak of three kinds, white, red and black, the white is excellent to make Canoes of, Shallopes, Ships, and other Vessels for the Sea, and for Claw-boats and Pipe-staves, the black is good to make Waynscof of; and out of the white Oak Acorns, (which is the Acorn Bears delight to feed upon): The Natives draw an Oyl, taking the rottenest Maple Wood which being burnt to ashes, they make a strong Lye therewith, wherein they boil their white Oak-Acorns until the Oyl swim on the top in great quantity; this they

**New-Englands Rarities. 49**

they fleet off, and put into bladders to anoint their naked Linbs, which corroborates them exceedingly; they eat it likewise with their Meat, it is an excellent clear and sweet Oyl: Of the Moss that grows at the roots of the white Oak the *Indeffes* make a strong decoction, with which they wash their *Papoufes* or young Childrens call'd Heads.

*Juniper*, which *Cardanus* saith is Cedar in hot Countries; and *Juniper* in cold Countries; it is hear very dwarfish and scrubby, growing for the most part by the Sea side.

*Willow.*

*Spurge Laurel*, called here *Poyson berry*, kills the *English* Cattle if they chance to feed upon it, especially Calves.

*Gaul*, or noble Mirtle. *Salon Mirtle*

*Elder.*

*Dwarf Elder.*

*For a Cut with a Bruse.*

*Alder*; An *Indian* Bruising and Cutting of his Knee with a fall, used no other remedy, than *Alder* Bark chewed fasting; and laid to it, which did soon heal it.

*To take Fire out of a Burn.*

The decoction is also excellent to take



50 New-Englands Barities.

the Fire out of a Burn or Scald.

*For Wounds and Cuts.*

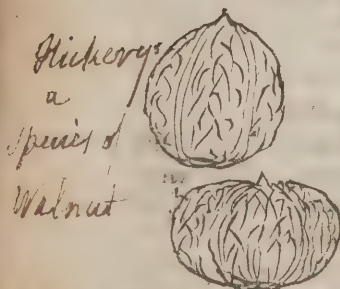
For Wounds and Cuts make a decoction of Bark of Alder, pour it into the Wound, and drink thereof.

*Hasel.*

*For sore Mouths, falling of the Palat.*

*Filberd*, both with hairy husks the Nuts, and setting hollow from the Nuts and fill'd with a kind of water of astringent taste; it is very good for sore Mouths, and falling of the Pallat, as the whole green Nut before it comes to Kernel, burnt and pulverized. The Kernels are seldom without maggots in them.

*The Figure of the Walnut.*



*Walnut*; the Nuts differ much from ours in Europe, they be smooth, much like Nutmeg in shape, are not much bigger, some three cornered, all of them but thin, replenished with Kernels.

But to the southward in Virginia Chestnuts they have large Walnuts both black & white, but different from the European

New-Englands Rarities. 51

*Chestnuts*; very sweet in taste, and may  
(as they usually are) eaten raw; the  
Indians sell them to the English for twelve  
pence the bushel. *Like ours*

*Beech.*

*Ash.*

*Quick-beam, or Wild-Ash. Like ours*  
Bark of Birch pulverized and wrought with  
the white of an Egg to a Salve, is a  
gallant Remedy for dry scurfy Sores up-  
on the Shins; and for Bruised Wounds  
and Cuts.

*Birch*, white and black; the bark of  
Birch is used by the Indians for bruised  
Wounds and Cuts, boyled very tender,  
and stampd betwixt two stones to a Plaister,  
and the decoction thereof poured into the  
Wound; And also to fetch the Fire out of  
Burns and Scalds.

*Poplar*, but differing in leaf.

*Plumb Tree*, several kinds, bearing  
some long, round, white, yellow, red, and  
black Plums; all differing in their Fruit  
from those in England.

*Wild Parcelane.*

*Wood-wax*, wherewith they dye many  
pretty Colours. *Genista tinctoria*

Red and Black Currans.

For

## 52 New-Englands Rarities.

For the Gout, or any Ach.

*Spunk*, an excrescence growing on the black Birch, the *Indians* use it for Tonic wood; and therewith they help the *Scurvica*, or Gout of the Hip, or any Gout Ach, burning the Patient with it in one or three places upon the Thigh, and upon certain Veins. *As the Chinese do with their Moxa.*

### 2. Of such Plants as are proper to the Country.

To ripen any Impostume or Swelling. For sore Mouths. The New-England Standing Disb.

**I**ndian Wheat, of which there is three sorts, yellow, red, and blew; the blew is commonly ripe before the other. The Month: Five or Six Grains of Indian Wheat hath produced in one year 600. It is hotter than our Wheat and clammy, excellent in Cataplasms to ripen any Swelling or impostume. The decoction of the blew Corn, is good to wash sore Mouths with: It is light of digestion, and the English make a kind of Loblolly of it.



beat with Milk, which they call *Sampe*;  
beat it in a Morter, and sift the flower  
of it; the remainder they call *Hommi-*  
which they put into a Pot of two or  
three Gallons, with Water, and boyl it  
on a gentle Fire till it be like a Hasty  
pudding; they put of this into Milk, and  
eat it. Their Bread also they make of  
*Homminey* so boiled, and mix their  
flour with it, cast it into a deep Bason  
which they form the Loaf, and then  
put it out upon the Peel, and presently put  
into the Oven before it spreads abroad;  
Flower makes excellent Puddens. *veracit*

*Bastard Calamus Aromaticus*, agrees  
with the description, but is not barren; they  
grow in July, and grow in wet places, as  
near the brinks of Ponds.

*To keep the Feet warm.*

The English make use of the Leaves to  
keep their Feet warm. There is a lit-  
tle Beast called a *Muskquash*, that liveth  
in small Houses in the Ponds, like Mole  
hills, that feed upon these Plants; their  
skins sent as sweet and as strong as Musk,  
and will last along time handfomly wrap'd  
up in Cotton wool; they are very good to  
lay amongst Cloaths. May is the best  
time

*minor  
species of  
Beaver*

# 54 New-Englands Rarities.

time to kill them, for then their Cods are strongest.

Wild-Leekes, which the Indians much to eat with their fish.

A Plant like *Knavers-Mustard*, called *New-England Mustard*.

*Mountain-Lillies*, bearing many yellow Flowers, turning up their Leaves like the *Martigon*, or *Turks Cap*, spotted with small spots as deep as *Saffron*; the Flower in July.

*One Berry*, or *Herb True Love*. See the Figure. *Herba Paris* fine

*Tobacco*, there is not much of it Plant in *New-England*; the *Indians* make use of a small kind with short round leaves called *Pooke*.

For Burns and Scalds.

With a strong decoction of *Tobacco* they Cure Burns and Scalds, boiling it in Water from a Quart to a Pint, then wash the Sore therewith, and strew on the powder of dried *Tobacco*.

*The* *Hollow Leaved Lavender*, is a Plant the *Saracena* grows in salt Marshes overgrown with Moss, with one straight stalk about the bigness of an Oat straw, better than a Cubit high; upon the top standeth out

*The Mountain Lilly, Herb True Berry* fantall  
*The Saracena flowers well in my garden*





I believe I am the first  
that has kept it so long  
yet abroad

Plotterson F.R.S  
anno 1758 1758

This year 1748 I  
have made a deep  
Bog in the Ground &  
it throws Well but  
does not flower

This year 1761  
had the Tall long leaves  
Saracena leaf Mapon  
N. Carolina throws Well  
the Saracena from Virginia  
with long leaves, is now for the  
first time June 12. 1763 in  
flower large all yellow  
the short red flower at same time  
in the same Pot

New-Englands Rarities. 55

Vertical Flower, the Leaves grow close  
to the root, in shape like a Tankard,  
low, tough, and alwayes full of Water,  
Root is made up of many small strings,  
growing only in the Moss, and not in  
Earth, the whole Plant comes to its  
perfection in August, and then it has  
Stalks, and Flowers as red as  
blood, excepting the Flower which hath  
a yellow admixt. I wonder where  
the knowledge of this Plant hath slept all  
this while, i. e. above Forty Years.

mine

The English  
Cane

For all manner of Fluxes.

It is excellent for all manner of Fluxes.

Live for ever, a kind of Cad. weed.

Tree Primrose, taken by the Ignorant Onagra

Scabious.

A Solar Plant, as some will have it.

Maiden Hair, or Cappellus veneris ve-  
nus, which ordinarily is half a Yard in  
height. The Apothecaries for shame now  
will substitute Wall-Rue no more for Mai-  
den Hair, since it grows in abundance in  
New-England; from whence they may  
have good store.

Pirola, Two kinds. See the Figures,  
both of them excellent Wound Herbs. pretty

Homer's Molley.

Lys-

56 **New-Englands Rarities.**

grows  
well  
here

Marvel  
of  
Pern

*Lyfimachus*, or *Loose Strife*, it grows dry grounds in the open Sun four high, Flowers from the middle of the to the top, the Flowers purple, standing a small sheath or cod, which when it breaks and puts forth a white silken the stalk is red, and as big as ones Finger.

*Marygold of Pern*, of which there are two kinds, one bearing black seeds, other black and white streak'd, this beareth the fairest flowers, commonly but upon the very top of the stalk.

*Treacle-Berries*. See before *Salomon Seal*.

*Oak of Hierusalem*. See before.

*Oak of Cappadocia*. See before.

*Earth-Nuts*, differing much from those in England, one sort of them bears a most beautiful Flower.

*For the Scurvy and Dropsie*.

*Sea-Tears*, they grow upon the banks in abundance, they are good for the Scurvy and Dropsie, boiled and eaten in a Sallade, and the broth drunk with it.

*Indian Beans*, better for Physick use than other Beans.

French Beans

*Indian Beans*, falsely called *French beans*, are better for Physick and Chyrurgery than



our Garden Beans. *Probatum est:*  
 grows Squashes, but more truly Squonter (squa-  
 four kind of Mellon, or rather Gourd, they oftentimes degenerate into Squashes  
 the Pl they oftentimes degenerate into Squashes  
 ding w wds; some of these are green, some  
 it is low, some longish like a Gourd, others  
 en down and like an Apple, all of them pleasant  
 Finger. and boyled and buttered, and season'd  
 there with Spice; but the yellow Squash called  
 seeds, the Apple Squash, because like an Apple,  
 his be about the bigness of a Pome-water: apple.  
 but the best kind; they are much eaten by  
 the Indians and the English, yet they  
 Salom ed the small white Worms (which  
 re. ylinians call *Ascarides*,) in the long Gut  
 vex the Fundament with a perpetual  
 e. sting, and a desire to go to stool.  
 m th Water-Mellon, it is a large Fruit,  
 s a m nothing near so big as a Pompion,  
 our, smoother, and of a sad Grasse green  
 the Se under, or more rightly Sap-green;  
 for the and some yellowness admixt when ripe;  
 eaten the seeds are black, the flesh or pulpe ex-  
 it. tending juicy.

For heat and thirst in Feavers.

It is often given to those sick of Fea-  
 vers, and other hot Diseases with good  
 success.

New-

58 New-Englands Rarities.

New-England Dayse, or *Primrose*,  
the second kind of *Navel Wort* in John  
upon Gerard; it flowers in May,  
grows amongst Moss upon hilly Ground  
and Rocks that are shady.

For Burns and Scalds.

It is very good for Burns and Scalds.  
*An Achariston*, or *Medicine* deserving  
thanks.

An Indian whose Thumb was swollen  
and very much inflamed, and full of pain  
increasing and creeping along to the wrist  
with little black spots under the Thumb  
against the Nail; I Cured it with  
*Umbellus veneris* Root and all, the Yolk  
of an Egg, and Wheat flower, f. C.

th plasme.

*Briony* of Peru, (we call it *thong*  
grown hear) or rather *Scammony*;  
take it for *Mechoacan*: The green part  
is absolutely Poyson; yet the Root  
dry may safely be given to strong Bodies.  
*Red and Black Currence*. See before.  
*Wild Damask Roses*, single, but  
large and sweet, but stiptick.

*Sweet Fern*, the Roots run one way  
another like a Net, being very long  
spreading abroad under the upper crust.

it grows in  
there is a  
fruit  
*Mechoacan*  
a  
*convolvulus*

a species  
of *Gale*  
or *Myrica*

**New-Englands Rarities. 59**

the Earth, sweet in taste, but withal astringent, much hunted after by our Swine: The Scotch-men that are in New-England have told me that it grows in Scotland.

*For Fluxes.*

The People boyl the tender tops in Molasses Beer, and in Possets for Fluxes, for which it is excellent.

*Sarsaparilia*, a Plant not yet sufficiently known by the English: Some say it is a kind of Bind weed; we have in New-England two Plants, that go under the name of *Sarsaparilia*; the one not above a foot in height without Thorns, the other having the same Leaf, but is a shrub as high as a Goose Berry Bush, and full of sharp Thorns; this I esteem as the right, by the shape and savour of the Roots, but rather by the effects answerable to that we have from other parts of the World; It groweth upon dry Sandy banks by the Sea side, and upon the banks of Rivers, so far as the Salt water flowes; and within Land up in the Country, as some have reported.

*Bill Berries*, two kinds, Black and Sky Coloured, which is more frequent.

*Wittle berries. Vibis Ilea*

*They have several species.*



60 *New-Englands Rarities.*

To cool the heat of Feavers, and quench  
Thirst.

They are very good to allay the burning  
heat of Feavers, and hot Agues, either  
in Syrup or Conserve.

*A most excellent Summer Dish.*

They usually eat of them put into a  
Bason, with Milk, and sweetned a little  
more with Sugar and Spice, or for cold  
Stomachs, in Sack. The *Indians* dry them  
in the Sun, and sell them to the *English* by  
the Bushell, who make use of them instead  
of Currence, putting of them into Pot-  
dens, both boyled and baked, and into Wa-  
ter Gruel.

*Knot Berry*, or *Clowde Berry*, seldom  
ripe.

*Rhus* or *Sumach*, differing from all that I  
ever see in the Herbalists; our *English*  
Cattle devour it most abominably, leaving  
neither Leaf nor Branch, yet it sprouts  
again next Spring.

*For Colds.*

The *English* use to boyl it in Beer, and  
drink it for Colds; and so do the *Indians*,  
from whom the *English* had the Medicine.

*Wild Cherry*, they grow in clusters like  
Grapes,

**New-Englands Barities. 61**

Grapes, of the same bigness, blackish, red  
when ripe, and of a harsh taste.

*For Fluxes.*

They are also good for Fluxes.

Transplanted and manured, they grow  
ceeding fair.

*may be Lord Weymouth's Pine*  
Board Pine, is a very large Tree two  
three Fadam about.

*For Wounds.*

It yields a very soveraign Turpentine  
the Curing of desperate Wounds.

*For Stabbs.*

The Indians make use of the Moss boile  
in Spring Water, for Stabbs, pouring  
the Liquor, and applying the boiled  
Moss well stamp'd or beaten betwixt two  
stones.

*For Burning and Scalding.*

And for Burning and Scalding, they  
take out the fire with a strong decocti-  
on of Alder Bark, then they lay upon it  
Playster of the Bark of Board Pine first  
layed tender, and beat to a Playster be-  
twixt two stones.

*To take Fire out of a Burn.*

One Christopher Luxe, a Fisher man,  
having burnt his Knee Pan, was healed

E 2.

again

## 62 New-Englands Rarities.

again by an *Indian Webb*, or Wife, (for they call those Women that have Bands;) She first made a strong decoction of Alder bark, with which she put out the Fire by Imbrocation, or letting it drop upon the Sore, which would be notably with it; then she Playstered with the Bark of *Board Pine*, or *Hemlock Tree*, boyled soft and stamp betwixt stones, till it was as thin as brown Paper and of the same Colour, she annointed the Playster with *Soyles Oyl*, and the like likewise, then she laid it on warm, sometimes she made use of the bark of *Larch Tree*.

*To eat out proud Flesh in a Sore.*

And to eat out the proud Flesh, they take a kind of *Earth Nut* boyled and stamped, and last of all, they apply to the Sore the Roots of *Water Lillies* and stamped betwixt two stones, till the Playster.

*For Stitches.*

The *Fir Tree*, or *Pitch Tree*, the bark that is made of all sorts of *Pitch* is an excellent thing to take away those separate Stitches of the Sides, which usually afflicteth those poor People that



ies. **New-Englands Rarities.** 63

(for) Stricken with the *Plague of the Back*:

have H. Note. You must make a large Toast, or  
g deco. Cake slit and dip it in the Tar, and bind  
the warm to the Side.

letting the most common Diseases in New England.

uld from The Black Pox, the Spotted Feaver,

ystere the Griping of the Gut, the Dropsie, and

Hem. Sciatica, are the killing Diseases in

twixt New-England.

yn Pap. The *Larch Tree*, which is the only  
annou. Tree of all the Pines, that sheds his Leaves  
d the before Winter; The other remaining  
warm, before Winter; The other remaining  
ark of Green all the Year: This is the Tree from  
which we gather that useful purging ex-  
ore. truse *Agarick*.

eth, the For Wounds and Cuts.

oyled. The Leaves and Gum are both very  
y app. good to heal Wounds and Cuts.

lies bu. For Wounds with Bruises.

ones, the Cured once a desperate Bruise with a  
Cut upon the Knee Pan, with an Ungent  
made with the Leaves of the *Larch Tree*,  
the and Hogs Grease, but the Gum is best.

h W. Spruce is a goodly Tree, of which they  
thole. make Masts for Ships, and Sail Yards: It  
ich per. generally conceived by those that have  
e that skill

strick. E 3

*fatal*  
*Dropsie*  
*of N. Eng.*

*abies,*  
*3 Spruce*

64 **New-Englands Barties,**

skill in Building of Ships, that here is ab-  
solutely the best Trees in the World, many  
of them being three Fathom about, and  
great length.

*An Achariston for the Scurvy.*

The tops of Green Spruce Boughs boiled  
in Bear, and drunk, is assuredly one of the  
best Remedies for the Scurvy, restoring the  
Infected party in a short time; they also  
make a Lotion of some of the decoction  
adding Hony and Allum.

*Spruce*

*abustaa  
fulu s m  
mimms*

*Hemlock Tree*, a kind of Spruce,  
bark of this Tree serves to dye Tawny  
the Fishers Tan their Sails and Nets with  
it.

*To break Sore or Swelling.*

The Indians break and heal their Swell-  
ings and Sores with it, boyling the  
Bark of young Hemlock very well,  
knocking of it betwixt two Stones to  
Playster, and anointing or soaking  
Soyle Oyl, they apply it to the Sore:  
will break a Sore Swelling speedily.

*One Berry, Herba Paris, or True Lavender*

*Sassafras, or Ague Tree.*

## New-Englands Rarities. 65

*For heat in Feavers.*

The Chips of the Root boyled in Beer  
is excellent to allay the hot rage of Fea-  
vers, being drunk.

*For Bruises and dry Blowes.*

The Leaves of the same Tree are very  
good made into an Oyntment, for Bruises  
and dry Blowes. The Bark of the Root  
we use instead of Cinamon; and it is Sold  
at the Barbadoes for two Shillings the  
Pound.

And why may not this be the Bark the  
Jesuits Powder was made of, that was so  
famous not long since in England, for  
Agues?

*Cran Berry, or Bear Berry*, because  
Bears use much to feed upon them, is a  
small trayling Plant that grows in Salt  
Marshes that are over-grown with Moss;  
the tender Branches (which are reddish)  
grow out in great length, lying flat on the  
ground, where at distances, they take Root,  
over-spreading sometimes half a score  
Acres, sometimes in small patches of about  
a Rood or the like; the Leaves are like  
Box, but greener, thick and glistering;  
the Blossoms are very like the Flowers of

*Vertue of  
Sassafras*

*Thyme*



66 *New-Englands Rarities.*

*Like* our *English Night Shade*, after which succeed the Berries, hanging by long small foot stalks, no bigger than a hair; at first they are of a pale yellow Colour, afterwards red, and as big as a Cherry; some perfectly round, others Oval, all of them hollow, of a sower astringent taste; they are ripe in *August* and *September*.

*For the Scurvy.*

They are excellent against the Scurvy.

*For the heat in Feavers.*

They are also good to allay the fervour of hot Diseases.

The *Indians* and *English* use them much, boyling them with Sugar for Sauce to eat with their Meat; and it is a delicate Sauce, especially for roasted Mutton: Some make Tarts with them as with Goose Berries.

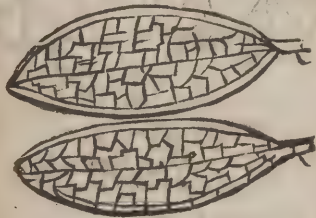
*Vine*, much differing in the Fruit, all of them very fleshy, some reasonably pleasant; others have a taste of Gun Powder, and these grow in Swamps, and low wet Grounds.

Of such Plants as are proper to  
the Country, and have no Name.

(1.)

*Pirola*, or *Winter Green*, that kind which  
grows with us in *England* is common  
*New-England*, but there is another plant  
which I judge to be a kind of *Pirola*, and  
proper to this Country, a very beautiful  
plant; The shape of the Leaf and the just  
signs of it you may see in the Figure.

The Leaf of the Plant judged to  
be a kind of *Pirola*.



Flowers with  
me this year  
1758 - a pretty  
white flower  
and no pinks

The Ground whereof is a Sap Green;  
embroydered (as it were) with many pale  
yellow Ribs, the whole Plant in shape is  
like

68 New-Englands Rarities.

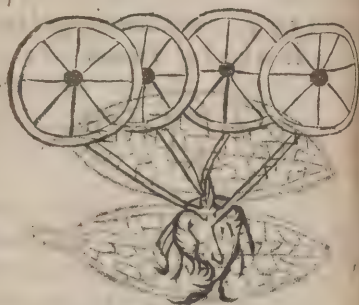
like *Semper vivum*, but far less, being not above a handful high, with one slender stalk, adorned with small pale yellow Flowers like the other *Pirola*. It grows not every where, but in some certain spots overgrown with Moss, close to swamps and shady; they are green in Summer and Winter.

For wounds.

They are excellent Wound Herbs, this I judge to be the better by far.

Probatum

*Thaps*  
*a Native Wort*



2.

This Plant was brought to me by a neighbour, who (wandering in the Woods to find out his strayed Cattle,) lost him



ities. **New-Englands Rarities.** 69

two Dayes; being as he ghesled eight  
Miles from the Sea-side. The Root  
is pretty thick and black, having a num-  
ber of small black strings growing from  
the stalks of the Leaves about a hand-  
long, the Leaves were round and as  
as a Silver five Shilling piece, of a sap  
dark-green Colour, with a line or ribb  
black as Jeat round the Circumference,  
from whence came black lines or ribs at  
equal distance, all of them meeting in a  
black spot in the Center. If I had staid  
longer in the Country, I should have pur-  
suedly made a Journey into those Parts  
where it was gathered, to discover if possi-  
ble, the Stalk and Flower; but now  
I shall refer it to those that are younger,  
and better able to undergo the pains and  
trouble of finding it out; for I understood  
of the Natives, that it is not common, that  
every where to be found, no more then  
the embroydered *Pirola*; which also is a  
most elegant Plant, and which I did endea-  
vor to bring over, but it perished at Sea.

For Wounds, and  
Cloves all heat, of New-England, is  
another Wound Herb not Inferiour to  
ours,

70 New-Englands Rarities.

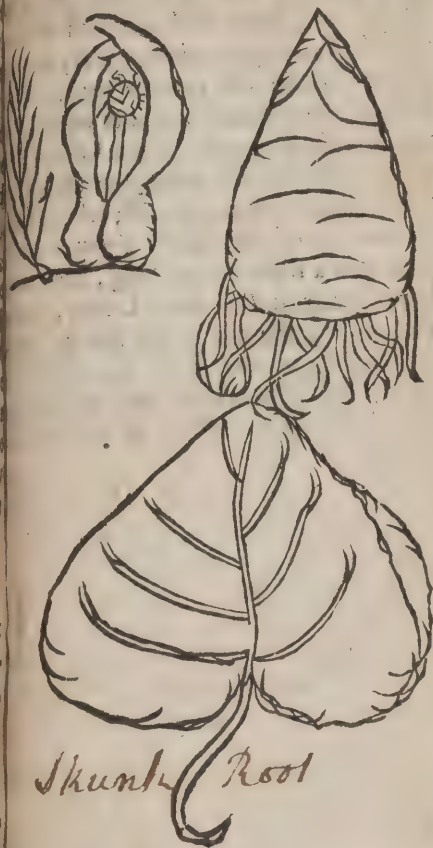
ours, but rather beyond it; Some of our English practitioners take it for *Veronica* and use it for the same, wherein they are grossly mistaken.

The Leaf is like a Nettle Leaf, but narrower and longer; the stalk about the bigness of a Nettle stalk; Champhered and hollow, and of a dusky red Colour; the Flowers are blew, small, and many, growing in spoky tufts at the top, and are not hooded, but having only four round Leaves, after which followeth an infinity of small longish light brown Seed; the Roots are knotty and matted together with an infinite number of small white strings; the whole Plant is commonly two Cubits high, bitter in taste, with a Rosenie savour.

(3.)

This Plant is one of the first that springs up after White *Hellibore*, in the like wet and black grounds, commonly by *Hellibore*, with a sheath or Hood like *Dragons*, but the pestle is of another shape, that is, having a round Purple Ball on the top of it, beset (as it were) with Burs; the hood shoots forth immediately from the Root, before any Leaf appears, having a Green

spring



Skunk Root

*Asarum Brita-folio* - Old Cal Natthis  
has flowered often in my garden  
now in flower in february 1764 —



72 *New-Englands Varieties.*

spring growing fast by it, like the smaller  
*Horse Tayl*, about the latter end of April  
the Hood and Sprig wither away, and then  
comes forth in the room a Bud, like the  
Bud of the *Walnut Tree*, but bigger; the  
top of it is of a pale Green Colour, cov-  
ered with brown skins like an Onion, the  
white underneath the Leaves, which spread  
in time out of the Bud, grow from the  
root with a stalk a Foot long, and are as  
big as the great *Bur Dock* Leaves, and of  
the colour; the Roots are many, and of  
the bigness of the steel of a Tobacco  
Pipe, and very white; the whole Plant  
smells as strong as a Fox; it continues till  
*August*.

A Branch of the Humming Bird Tree.



I first had this fine  
plant in 1750.

Notime Tengeri

Balsimina with y<sup>e</sup>ll. spotted flower

(4.)

This Plant the *Humming Bird* feedeth upon, it groweth likewise in wet grounds and is not at its full growth till July, when it is two Cubits high and better, Leaves are thin, and of a pale green Colour, some of them as big as a Nettle Leaf, it spreads into many Branches, known by the setting on, and of a purple Colour, and garnished on the top with many hollow dangling Flowers of a bright yellow Colour, speckled with a deeper yellow, as it were shadowed, the Stalkes are as hollow as a Kix, and so are the Roots, which are transparent, very tender, and full of a yellowish juice.

For Bruises and Aches upon Stroaks.

The Indians make use of it for Aches, being bruised between two stones, and laid to cold, but made (after the *English* manner) into an unguent with Hogs Grease, there is not a more soveraign remedy for bruises of what kind soever, and for Aches upon Stroaks.

In August, 1670. in a Swamp among Alders, I found a sort of Tree Somewhat like the Stalks of some two or three Inches



# New-Englands Rarities. 75

about, as hollow as a Kix and very brittle,  
the Leaves were smooth, and in shape like  
*Sonchus levis*, i. e. *Hares Lettice*, but lon-  
ger, some about a Foot, these grow at a di-  
stance one from another, almost to the  
top, where it begins to put forth Flowers  
between the Leaves and the Stalk, the top  
of the stalk runs out into a spike, beset  
about with Flowers like Sow Thistle, of  
blew or azure colour: I brought home  
one of the Plants which was between  
twelve and thirteen Foot in length, I won-  
dered at it the more for that so large and  
small a Plant should grow from so small a  
root, consisting of slender white strings  
little bigger than Bents, and not many of  
them, and none above a Finger long,  
growing under the upper crust of the  
earth; the whole Plant is full of Milk,  
and of a strong favour.

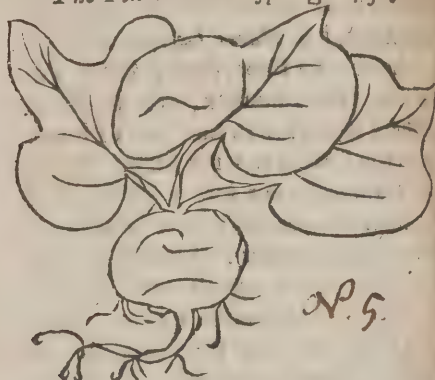
*A sort of Lettice*

*the blew flowers, flowered in my garden*  
(5.)

This Plant I found in a gloomy dry  
Wood under an Oak, 1670. the 18th  
of August, afterwards I found it in open  
ground, in grounds, but yet somewhat  
shady: The Root is about the bigness  
of a French Walnut, the Bark thereof is  
brown

76 New-Englands Rarities.

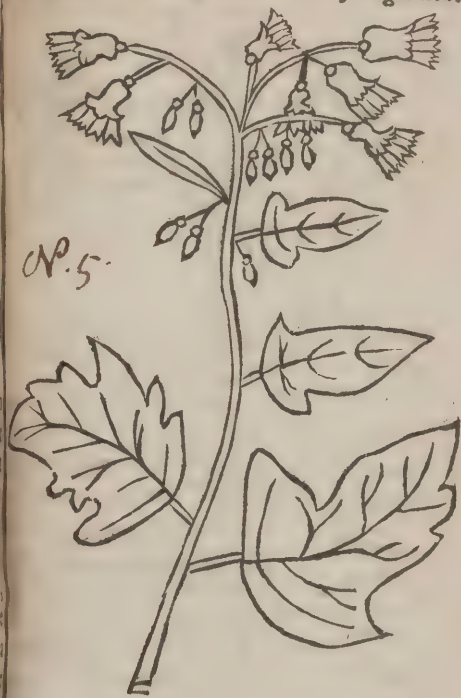
*The Plant when it springs up first.*



brown, and rugged, within of a yellowish Colour, from whence ariseth a slender stalk, no bigger than an Oat straw, about two Cubits in height, somewhat bent; then a handful above the Root shooteth up one Leaf of a Grass Green colour, and an Inch or two above that, another Leaf, and so four or five at a greater distance one from another, till they come within a handful of the top, where upon slender foot stalks grow the Flowers four or five more or fewer, clustering together in a long green husks milk white, consisting of ten small Leaves, snipt a little on the edge.

New-Englands Rarities. 77

The Figure of the Plant when it is at full growth.



with purple hair threads in the midst; the whole Plant is of a brackish tast: When it is at its full growth the stalks are as red as Blood.

Species of E. 2. 6. This  
~~Eupatorium~~ or *prunastris*  
 or *Eupatorium* No. Albo





Chelone  
 I have to the Wild & the Garden

T  
 grov  
 or fo  
 slend  
 the I  
 again  
 Leav  
 midf  
 four  
 like a  
 for fo  
 green  
 grow  
 the h  
 like  
 conta  
 the to  
 green  
 wool  
 point  
 up th  
 point  
 botto  
 stand  
 thoo  
 at th

(6.)

This Plant Flowers in *August*; and grows in wet Ground; it is about three or four foot in height, having a square slender stalk chamfered, hollow and tuff, the Leaves grow at certain distances one against another, of the colour of *Egrimony* Leaves sharpe pointed, broadest in the midst about an Inch and half, and three or four Inches in length, snipt about the edges like a Nettle Leaf, at the top of the Stalk for four or five Inches thick, set with pale green husks, out of which the Flowers grow, consisting of one Leaf, shaped like the head of a Serpent, opening at the top like a mouth, and hollow throughout, containing four crooked pointels, and on the top of every pointel a small glistering green button, covered with a little white woolly matter, by which they are with the pointels fastened close together and thore up the tip of the upper chap, the crooked pointels are very stiff and hard, from the bottom of the husks, wherein the Flower stands, from the top of the Seed Vessel, shoots out a white thread which runs at the bottom of the Flower, and is

80 New-Englands Rarities.

out at the mouth; the whole Flower is  
milk white, the inside of the chaps reddish,  
the Root I did not observe.



*Herba Paris*

7. This



New-Englands Rarities. 81

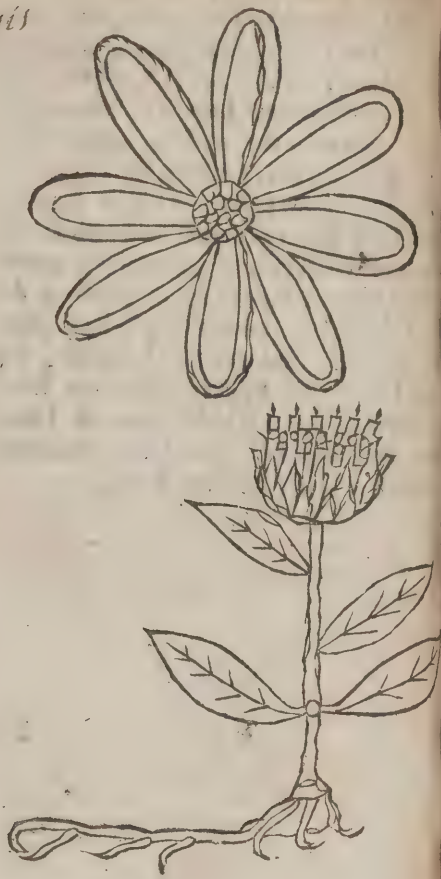
(7.)

This Plant I take for a varigated Herb  
*Paris*, *True Love* or *One Berry*, or rather  
*One Flower*, which is milk white, and  
made up with four Leaves, with many  
black threads in the middle, upon every  
thread grows a Berry (when the Leaves of  
the Flower are fallen) as big as a white  
pease, of a light red colour when they are  
ripe, and clustering together in a round  
form as big as a Pullets Egg, which at di-  
stance shews but as one Berry, very plea-  
sant in taste, and not unwholsome; the  
Root, Leaf, and Flower differ not from  
our *English* kind, and their time of bloo-  
ming and ripening agree, and therefore  
doubtless a kind of *Herba Paris*.

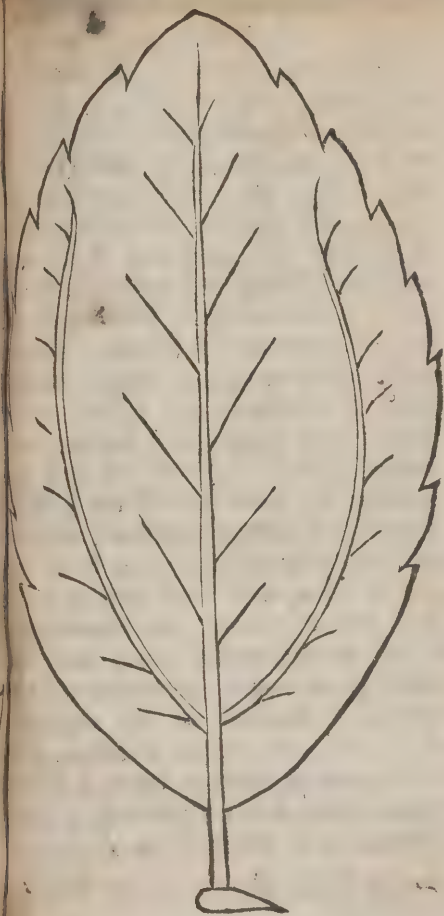
82 New-Englands Rarities.

The small Sun Flower, or Marygold of America.

Conceptus



ties.  
America.





## 84 New-Englands Rarities.

( 8. )

This Plant is taken by our Simplists  
 be a kind of *Golden Rod*, by others  
*Sarazens Confound*, I judge it to be a  
 of small *Sun Flower*, or *Marygold* of  
*West Indies*; the Root is brown and  
 der, a foot and half in length, running  
 slope under the upper face of the Earth  
 with some strings here and there, the  
 as big as the stem of a Tobacco pipe,  
 of pith, commonly brownish, sometimes  
 purple, three or four foot high, the Leaves  
 grow at a distance one against another  
 rough, hard, green above, and gray  
 neath, slightly snipt and the ribs ap-  
 most on the back side of the Leaf.  
 Flower is of a bright yellow, with  
 yellow cups in the midst, as in the  
*gold of Peru*, with black threads in  
 with yellow pointels, the Flower spreads  
 it self abroad out of a cup made up  
 many green beards, not unlike a *Thistle*.  
 Within a handful of the top of the  
 stalk (when the Flower is fallen, grows  
 an excrescence or knob as big as a Walnut  
 which being broken yieldeth a kind of  
*Turpentine* or rather *Rosen*.

The *Guarejuna* is the Nest of *Indians*  
 I this *Sun Flower* in my Garden

*What Cutchenele is.*

The stalk beneath and above the knob,  
 covered with a multitude of small Bugs,  
 at the bigness of a great flea, which I  
 have will make good Cutchenele, or-  
 as they should be before they come  
 have Wings: They make a perfect  
 Colours to Paint with, and du-

Of such Plants as have sprung up  
 since the English Planted and kept  
 Cattle in New-England. *probably came over  
 with hay seeds & grass seeds*

Onch Grass.  
 Shepherds Purse.

made in  
 a Thistle.

op of  
 Thistle.

n, great  
 Arrach.

a Wal-  
 Shade, with the white Flower.

a kind  
 of Singing, which was the first Plant  
 taken notice of.

husk  
 Malloes.

Plantain,

86 New-Englands Rarities.

Plantain, which the Indians call Eng  
Mans Foot, as though produced  
their treading.

Black Henbane.

Wormwood.

Sharp pointed Dock.

Patience.

Bloodwort.

And I suspect Adders Tongue.

Knot Grass.

Cheek weed.

Compherie, with the white Flower.

May weed, excellent for the Mother  
of our English Housewives call it

Wort, and make a good Unguent  
old Sores.

The great Clot Bur.

Mullin, with the white Flower.

2. What became of the influence  
those Planets that produce and govern  
these Planets before this time!

I have now done with such Plants  
grow wild in the Country in great plenty  
(although I have not mentioned all) I  
now in the Fifth place give you to understand



New-Englands Rarities. 87

and what *English* Herbs we have growing  
in our Gardens that prosper there as well  
in their proper Soil, and of such as do  
not, and also of such as will not grow there  
at all.

Of such Garden Herbs (amongst  
which) as do thrive there, and of such  
as do not.

*Abidge* growes there exceeding well.

*Lettrice.*

*Vel.*

*Wiley.*

*Marigold.*

*French Mallows*

*Carvel.*

*Fluena.*

*Summer Savory.*

*Summer Savory.*

*me.*

*Plant.*

*rats.*

(snips of a prodigious size.

*Beetes.*

*Radishes.*

88 *New-Englands Rarities*

*Radishes.*

*Turnips.*

*Purslain.*

*Wheat.*

*Rye.*

*Barley*, which commonly degenerates  
into *Oats*.

*Oats.*

*Pease* of all sorts, and the best in  
World; I never heard of, nor did  
eight Years time, one Worm eaten Pease

*Garden Beans.*

*Naked Oats*, there called *Silpeas*,  
excellent grain used instead of Oat Meal  
they dry it in an Oven, or in a Pan  
the fire, then beat it small in a Mortar

*Another standing Dish in New-England*

And when the Milk is ready to  
they put into a pottle of Milk about  
or twelve spoonfuls of this Meal, so  
it leasurely, stirring of it every foot  
it burn too; when it is almost  
enough, they hang the Kettle up high  
and let it stew only, in short time  
thicken like a Custard; they feed

*arities.* New-Englands Rarities. 89

with a little Sugar and Spice, and so serve  
to the Table in deep Basons, and it is  
together as good as a White-pot.

For People weakned with long Sickness.

*degen* It exceedingly nourisheth and streng-  
ens people weakned with long Sickness.

*best* Sometimes they make Water Gruel  
*did* it, and sometimes thicken their Flesh  
*aten* with either with this or *Homminey*, if it  
for Servants.

*Spear Mint.*

*Silper* New, will hardly grow.

*Oat* Fewer few prospereth exceedingly.

*a Pan* Southern Wood, is no Plant for this

*a Ma* Country. Nor,

Rosemary. Nor

*-Eng* Bayes.

*dy to* White Satten groweth pretty well, so  
*k about* doth

*al, so* Lavender Cotton. But

*foot* Lavender is not for the climate.

*noft* Penny Royal.

*up his* Smalledge.

*me in* Ground Ivy, or Ale Hoof.

*seale* Gilly Flowers will continue two Years.

Fennel



90 *New-Englands Rarities.*

*Fennel* must be taken up, and kept in warm Cellar all Winter.

*Housleek* prospereth notably.

*Holly hocks.*

*Enula Campana*, in two Years time Roots rot.

*Comferie*, with white Flowers.

*Coriander*, and

*Dill*, and

*Annis* thrive exceedingly, but *Annis* Seed, as also the Seed of *Fennel* seldome come to maturity; the Seed of *Annis* commonly eaten with a fly.

*Clary* never lasts but one Summer, Roots rot with the Frost.

*Sparagus* thrives exceedingly, so do *Garden Sorrel*, and

*Sweet Bryer*, or *Eglantine*.

*Bloodwort* but sorrily, but

*Patience*, and

*English Roses*, very pleasantly.

*Celandine*, by the West Country is reputed good for the eyes, called *Kenning Wort*, grows but slowly.

*Muschata*, as well as in England.

*Dittander*, or *Pepper Wort*, flourisheth notably, and so doth.

*Tansie*.

*Musk Mellons* are better then our *English*, and.

Cucumbers.

Pompions, there be of several kinds, some proper to the Country, they are dryer then our *English* Pompions, and better tasted; you may eat them green.

The ancient New-England standing Dish.

But the Housewives manner is to slice them when ripe, and cut them into dice, and so fill a pot with them of two or three Gallons, and stew them upon a gentle fire whole day, and as they sink, they fill again with fresh Pompions, not putting any liquor to them; and when it is stew'd enough, it will look like bak'd Apples; this they Dish, putting Butter to it, and a little Vinegar, (with some Spice, as Ginger, &c.) which makes it tart like an Apple, and so serve it up to be eaten with Fish or Flesh: It provokes Urin extremely and is very windy.

Sixthly and lastly,  
Of Stones, Minerals, Metals and  
Earths.

as the place  
where they  
are found  
is not  
mentioned  
I doubt  
the  
relation

AS first, the *Emerald* which grows in  
flat Rocks, and is very good.

*Rubies*, which here are very watry.  
I have heard a story of an *Indian*, that  
found a stone, up in the Country, by  
great Pond as big as an Egg, that in a day  
Night would give a light to read by; but  
I take it to be but a story.

*Diamond*, which are very brittle, and  
therefore of little worth.

*Crystal*, called by our West Country  
Men the *Kenning Stone*; by *Sebegug* Pond  
is found in considerable quantity, not far  
from thence is a Rock of *Crystal* called  
the *Moose Rock*, because in shape like a  
*Moose*, and

*Muscovy Glass*, both white and purple  
of reasonable content.

*Black Lead*.

*Bole Armoniack*.

*Crystals* made perfectly round was  
used for seeing spirits in portul Green  
so was called the *Kenning* or *Seeing*  
*Stone* - by Cheats & Deluders



**New-Englands Rarities. 93**

Red and Yellow Oker.

*Terra Sigilla.*

*Vitriol.*

*Antimony.*

*Arsnick*, too much.

*Lead.*

*Tin.*

*Tin Glafs.*

*Silver.*

*Iron*, in abundance, and as good bog  
Iron as any in the World.

*Copper*. It is reported that the French  
have a *Copper Mine* at *Port Royal*, that  
yieldeth them twelve Ounces of pure  
*Copper* out of a Pound of *Oar*.

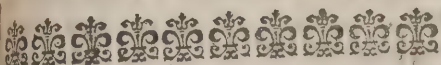
I shall conclude this Section with a  
Strange Cure effected upon a Drummers  
Wife, much afflicted with a Wof in  
her Breast; the poor Woman lived with  
her Husband at a Town called by the  
*Indians*, *Casco*, but by the *English*,  
*Famouth*, where for some time she swa-  
ged the Pain of her Sore, by bathing it  
with strong Malt Beer, which it would

G 2

suck

94 **New-Englands Rarities.**

suck in greedily, as if some living Creature: When she could come by no more Beer, (for it was brought from *Boston*, along the Coasts by Merchants,) she made use of *Rhum*, a strong Water drawn from Sugar Canes, with which it was lull'd a sleep; at last, (to be rid of it altogether) she put a quantity of *Arsnick* to the *Rhum*, and bathing of it as formerly, she utterly destroyed it, and Cured her self, but her kind Husband, who sucked out the Poyson as the Sore was healing, lost all his Teeth, but without further danger or inconvenience.



An ADDITION of some  
RARITIES over-  
sight.

**T**He *Star Fish*, having fine points like a Star, the whole Fish no bigger then the Palm of a Mans hand, of a tough substance like leather, and about an Inch in thickness, whitish underneath, and of the Colour of a Cucumber above, and somewhat ruff: When it is warm in ones hand, you may perceive a stiff motion, turning down one point, and thrusting up another: It is taken to be poysonous; they are very common, and found thrown up on the Rocks by the Sea side.

*Sea Bream*, which are plentifully taken upon the Sea Coasts, their Eyes are accounted rare Meat, whereupon the proverbial comparison, *It is worth a Sea Breams Eye.* G 3. *Blew*



96 *New-Englands Rarities.*

*Blew Fish*, or *Horse*, I did never see any of them in *England*; they are as big usually as the *Salmon*, and better Meat by far: It is common in *New-England* and esteemed the best sort of Fish next to *Rock Cod*.

*Cat Fish*, having a round Head, and great glaring Eyes like a Cat: They live for the most part in holes of Rocks, and are discovered by their Eyes: It is an excellent Fish.

*Munk Fish*, a flat Fish like *scate*, having a hood like a *Fryers Cowl*.

*Clam*, or *Clamp*, a kind of *Shell Fish*, a white *Muscle*.

*Razor* *An Achariston, For Pin and Web]*  
*Sheath Fish*, which are there very plentiful, a delicate Fish, as good as a *Prawn*, covered with a thin Shell like the sheath of a Knife, and of the colour of a *Muscle*.

Which shell Calcin'd. and Pulveriz'd, is excellent to take off a Pin and Web, or  
are found in plenty of the Sea  
coasts of *Cornwall*

New-Englands Rarities. 97

any kind of Filme growing over the Eye.

*a Species of Seal*

Morse, or Sea Horse, having a great Head, wide Jaws, armed with Tusshes as white as Ivory, of body as big as a Cow, proportioned like a Hog, of brownish bay, smooth skin'd and impenetrable; they are frequent at the Isle of Sables, their Teeth are worth eight Groats the Pound; the best Ivory being Sold but for half the Money.

*For Poyson.*

It is very good against Poyson.

*For the Cramp.*

As also for the Cramp, made into Rings.

*For the Piles.*

And a secret for the Piles, if a wise Man have the ordering of it.

The Manaty, a Fish as big as a Wine pipe, most excellent Meat; bred in the Rivers of Hispaniola in the West Indies; it hath Teats, and nourisheth its young ones with Milk; it is of a green Colour, and tasteth like Veal.

*a large species of Seal*

*G 4*  
*Mante is not found so far to the north*

98 **New-Englands Rarities.**

*For the Stone Collick.*

There is a Stone taken out of the Head  
that is rare for the Stone and Collick.

*To provoke Urine.*

Their Bones beat to a Powder and drank  
with convenient Liquors, is a gallant Urin  
provoking Medicine.

*For Wound and Bruise.*

*Water Lilly.* An Indian, whose Knee was bruised  
with a fall, and the Skin and Flesh striped  
down to the middle of the Calf of his  
Leg; Cured himself with *Water Lilly*  
Roots boyled and stamped.

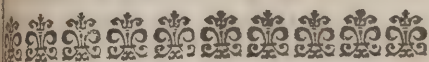
*For Swellings of the Foot.*

An Indian Webb, her Foot being very  
much swell'd and inflamed, asswaged the  
swelling, and took away the inflammation  
with our Garden or *English Patience*, the  
Roots roasted. f. Cataplas. Anno 1670.  
June 28.

*To dissolve a Scirrhus Tumour.*

An Indian dissolv'd a *Scirrhus Tumour*  
in the Arm and Hip, with a fomentation of  
Tobacco, applying afterwards the Herb  
stamp'd betwixt two stones.





A

DESCRIPTION

OF AN

INDIAN SQUA.

NOW (gentle Reader) having trespass'd upon your patience a long while in the perusing of these rude Observations, I shall, to make you amends, present you by way of Divertisement, or Recreation, with a Copy of Verses made sometime since upon the Picture of a young and handsome *Squaw*, not improperly transferred upon the *Indian SQUA*, or Female *Indian*, stick'd up in all her bravery.

The Men are somewhat Horse Fac'd,  
and generally Faucious, *i. e.* without  
Beards; but the Women many of them  
have

100 **New-Englands Rarities.**

*Intreing*

have very good Features; seldome without a *Come to me, or Cos Amoris*, in their Countenance; all of them black Eyes, having even short Teeth, and very white their Hair black, thick and long, broad Breasted; handsome streight Bodies, and slender, considering their constant loose habit: Their limbs cleanly, straight, and of a convenient stature, generally, as plump as Partridges, and saving here and there one, of a modest deportment.

Their Garments are a pair of Sleeves of Deer, or Moose skin drest, and drawn with lines of several Colours into Asiatick Work with Buskins of the same, a short Mantle of Trading Cloath, either Blew or Red, fastened with a knot under the Chin, and girt about the middle with a Zone, wrought with white and black Beads into pretty Works; of these Beads they have Bracelets for their Neck, and Arms, and Links to hang in their Ears, and a fair Table curiously made up with Beads likewise, to wear before their Breast; their Hair they Comb backward, and tie it up short with a Border, about two handfulls broad, wrought

brought in Works as the other with their  
heads: But enough of this.

## The P O E M.

Whether White or Black be best  
Call your Senses to the quest;  
And your touch shall quickly tell  
The Black in softness doth excel,

And in smoothness; but the Ear,

that, can that a Colour hear?

No, but 'tis your Black ones Wit

that doth catch, and captive it.

And if Slut and Fair be one,

sweet and Fair, there can be none:

Nor can ought so please the tast

As what's brown and lovely drest:

And who'll say, that that is best

To please ones Sense, to displease the rest?

Mangre



102 New-Englands Rarities.

Maugre then all that can be sed

In flattery of White and Red:

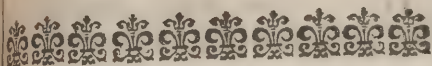
Those flatterers themselves must say

That darkness was before the Day:

And such perfection here appears

It neither Wind nor Sun-shine fears.

Many that have come from our  
Colonies, call the Indian  
Nymphs are pretty & inviting  
but as they grow old are much  
the Reverse.



A

Chronological TABLE  
Of the most remarkable pas-  
sages in that part of America,  
known to us by the name of  
NEW-ENGLAND.

**A** Nno Dom. 1492. Christ. Columbus  
discovered America.

1516. The Voyage of Sir Thomas  
Parr, Vice Admiral of England, and  
Sir Sebastian Cabota to Brazile, &c.

1527. New-found-Land, discovered  
by the English.

1577. Sir Francis Drake began his  
Voyage about the World.

Anno

104 New-Englands Rarities.

Anno Dom.

1585. *Nova Albion* discovered by  
Sir Francis Drake, and by him so Named.

1585. April 9. Sir Richards Greenwile  
was sent by Sir water Rawleigh with a  
Fleet of Seven Sail to *Virginia*, and was  
stiled the General of *Virginia*.

1586. Captain Thomas Candish, a  
*Sassolk* Gentleman, began his Voyage  
round about the World, with three Ships  
past the Streights of *Magellan*, burn'd  
and ranfack'd in the entry of *Chile*, *Peru*,  
and *New-Spain*, near the great Island *Cal-*  
*ifornia* in the South Sea; and returned to  
*Plymouth* with a precious Booty Anno  
Dom. 1588. September the 8th; being the  
third since *Magellan* that circuited the  
Earth.

1588. Sir Walter Rawleigh first dis-  
covered *Virginia*, by him so Named, in  
honour of our Virgin Queen.

1595. Sir Walter Rawleigh discovered  
*Guiana*.

1666



*New-Englands Rarities.* 105

*Dom.*

1606. A Collony sent to *Virginia*.

1614. *Bermudas* Planted.

1618. The blazing Star, then *Plymouth*  
plantation began in *New-England*.

1628. The *Massachusetts* Colony Plan-  
ted, and *Salem* the first Town therein  
built.

1629. The first Church gathered in this  
Colony was at *Salem*; from which Year  
to this present Year, is 43 Years.

In the compass of these Years, in this  
Colony, there hath been gathered Fourty  
Churches, and 120 Towns built in all the  
Colonies of *New-England*.

The Church of Christ at *Plymouth*,  
was Planted in *New-England* Eight Years  
before others.

1630. The Governour and Assistants  
arrived

*Remarks*

106 New-Englands Rarities.

Anno Dom.

arrived with their Patent for the Massachusetts.

1630. The Lady Arabella in New-England.

1630. When the Government was established, they Planted on Noddles Island.

*and his son* 1631. Captain John Smith Governour of Virginia, and Admiral of New-England, Dyed. *the greatest Hero of that Virginia Age - & his life in Portraits*

1631. Mr. Mavericke Minister at Dorchester in New-England.

1631. John Winthorpe Esq; chosen the first time Governour, he was eleven times Governour; some say Nineteen times; eleven Years together; the other Years by intermission.

1631. John Wilson Pastor of Charles Town.

Anno

23. New-Englands Rarities. 107

Anno Dom.

1631. Sir R. Saltingstall at Water Town  
came into New-England.

1631. Mr. Rog. Harlackinden was a  
Majestrate, and a Leader of their Military  
Forces.

Dr. Wilson gave 1000 l. to New-Eng-  
land, with which they stored themselves  
with great Guns.

1633. Mr. Thomas Hooker, Mr. Haynes,  
and Mr. John Cotton, came over together  
in one Ship. *Ministers*

1634. The Country was really placed  
in a posture of War, to be in readines at  
all times.

1635. Hugh Peters went over for  
New-England. *but went back to England*

1636. Connecticut Colony Planted.

H

Anno



108 *New-Englands Rarities,*

*Anno Dom.*

1637. The *Pequites* Wars, in which  
were Slain Five or Six Hundred *Indians*.

Ministers that have come from *England*,  
chiefly in the Ten first Years, Ninety  
Four: Of which returned Twenty Seven:  
Dyed in the Country Thirty Six: Ten  
alive in the Country Thirty One.

The Number of Ships that transported  
Passengers to *New-England* in these times,  
was 298. supposed: Men, Women, and  
Children, as near as can be ghesled  
21200.

1637. The first Synod at *Cambridge*  
in *New-England*, where the *Antinomian*  
and *Famalistical* Errors were confuted;  
80 Errors now amongst the *Massachusetts*.

1638. *New-Haven* Colony began.

Mrs. *Hutchinson* and her erroneous com-  
panions banished the *Massachusetts* Colony.

**New-Englands Rarities. 109**

*Anno Dom.*

A terrible Earth quake throughout the Country.

Mr. John Harvard, the Founder of Harvard College (at Cambridge in New-England) Deceased, gave 700 l. to the sustaining of it.

1639. First Printing at Cambridge in New-England.

1639. A very sharp Winter in New-England.

1642. Harvard College Founded with Publick Library. *Burnt down January 25 1764*

Ministers bred in New-England, and (about 10,) in Harvard College of which dyed in the Country 10; living 81; removed to England 41.

1643. The first combination of the United Colonies, viz. Plymouth, Massachusetts, Connecticut, and New-

110 *New-Englands Rarities.*

*Anno Dom.*

1646. The second Synod at Cambridge Anno  
touching the duty and power of Mag- 165  
strates in matters of Religion: Secondly,  
the nature and power of Synods. 165  
New-E

Mr. *Eliot* first Preached to the Indians  
in their Native Language. Mr.  
Massac

1647. Mr. *Thomas Hooker* Died. 165

1648. The third Synod at Cambridge, Englan  
publishing the Platform of Discipline. 165

1649. Mr. *John Winthorpe* Governour  
now Died. 165  
Englan

This Year a strange multitude of Cater-  
pillers in New-England. 165  
Prides

Thrice seven Years after the Planting of  
the English in New-England, the Indians 166  
of Massachusetts being 30000 able Men  
were brought to 300. 166  
Englan

1651. *Hugh Peters*, and Mr. *Widdowson*  
came for England. Ann



*New-Englands Rarities, III*

*Anno Dom.*

1652. Mr. John Cotton Dyed.

1653. The great Fire in Boston in New-England.

Mr. Thomas Dudley, Governour of the Massachusetts, Dyed this Year.

1654. Major Gibbons Died in New-England.

1655. Jamaica Taken by the English.

1657. The Quakers arrived in New-England, at Plymouth.

1659. Mr. Henry Dunster the first President of Harvard College now Dyed.

1661. Major Atherton Dyed in New-England.

1663. Mr. John Norton Pastor of Boston in New-England, Dyed suddenly.

112 New-Englands Rarities.

Anno Dom.

Mr. Samuel Stone, Teacher of Harvard  
Church, Dyed this Year.

1664. The whole Bible Printed in the  
Indian Language finished.

1664

The Manadaes, called New Amsterdam, now called New York; surrendered up to His Majesties Commissioners for the settling of the respective Colonies in New-England, viz. Sir Robert Carr, Collonel Nicols, Collonel Cartwright, and Mr. Samuel Mavericke,) in September, after thirteen Dayes the Fort of Arania, now Albania; twelve Dayes after that, the Fort Amfapha; then the Ware Castle Man'd with Dutch and Swedes; the Three first Forts and Towns being Built upon the great River Mohogau, otherwise called Hudsons River.

In September appeared a great Comet for the space of three Months.

1665. Mr. John Indicot, Governour of the Massachusetts Dyed.

New York until this  
the Dutch Colonies

**New-Englands Rarities. 113**

Anno Dom. 1665.

A thousand Foot sent this Year by the French King to Canada, to *Quebec*

Captain *Davenport* killed with Lightning at the Castle by *Boston* in *New-England*, and several Wounded.

1666. The *Small Pox* at *Boston*. Seven slain by Lightning, and divers Burnt: This Year also *New-England* had cast away, and taken 31 Vessels, and some in 1667.

1667. Mr. *John Wilson* Pastor of *Boston* Dyed, aged 79 Years.

1670. At a place called *Kenibunc*, which is in the Province of *Meyne*, a Colony belonging to the Heir of that Honourable Knight Sir *Ferdinando Gorges*, not far from the River side, a piece of Clay Ground was thrown up by a Mineral vapour (as we supposed) over the tops of high Oaks that grew between it and the River, into the River, stopping the course thereof, and leaving a hole two Yards square, wherein were thousands of Clay



114 New-Englands Rarities.

Anno Dm.

Clay Bullets as big as Musquet Bullets,  
and pieces of Clay in shape like the Barrel  
of a Musquet.

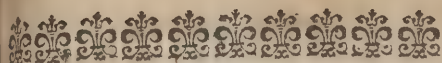
1671. Elder Penn dyed at Boston.

1672. Mr. Richard Bellingham, Go-  
vernour of the Massachusetts in New-  
England.

---

F I N I S.

---



Books Printed and Sold by Giles Widdows  
at the Green Dragon in St. Pauls  
Church Yard.

Folio.

Doctor Nath. Homes's Works.

Mr. Davies's Rights belonging to Uni-  
formity in Churches.

A Book of the five Sences, in Copper  
Plates.

Quarto.

Mr. Caryl's Exposition on the 32, 33,  
and 34 Chapters of the Book of Job.

Dr. Sibbs's *Light from Heaven*, dis-  
covering the Fountain opened, the Angels  
acclamations, the Churches Riches, the  
Riches Poverty, in four Treatises.

Mr. Bartons Remedy for Londons lan-  
guishing Trade.

*The younger Brothers Apology*, or a  
Fathers free power, &c.

*Marcelia*, or the Treacherous Friend,  
a Tragy-Comedy. Written by Madam  
Boothby.

Large Octavo.

Mr. Stucklyes *Gospel Glass*, representing  
the miscarriages of English professors.

Mr. Gales *Theophily*.

His

His Anatomy of Infidelity.  
His Idea of Jansenism both Historick  
Digmatick, in small Octavo.  
Pufendorfs Elementorum Juris prae  
via Universalis.

Walker's Grammar.

His Art of Teaching.

12. and 24.

Frommonii Synopsis Metaphysica.

Hooles Greek Testament.

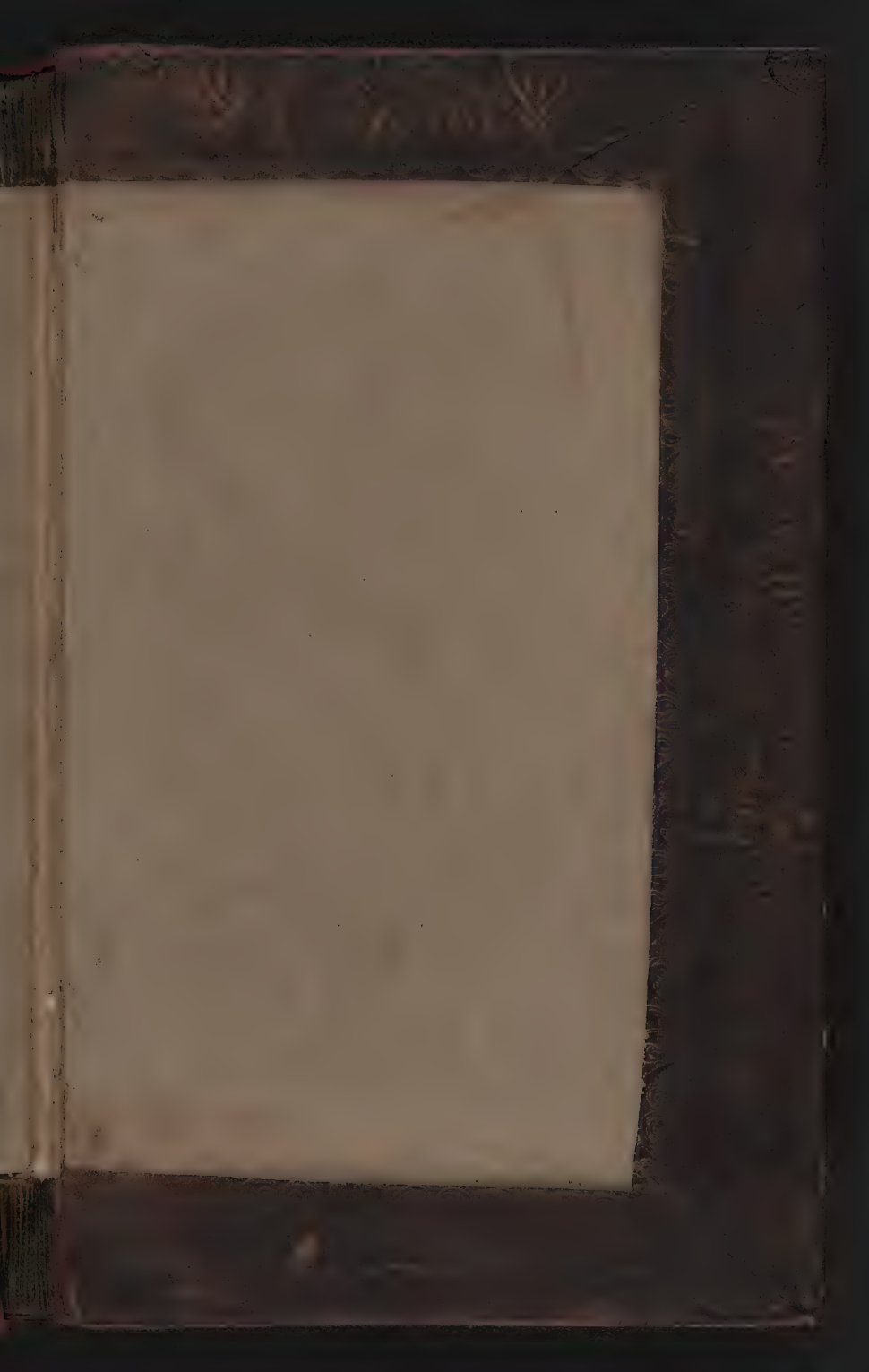
History of the Bible.

Batavia, or the Hollander Display  
in brief Charectars, &c.

Dr. Collet's daily Devotions, or  
Christians Morning and Evening Sacri  
fice; digested into Prayers and Medi  
tations, with some short directions for  
Godly life; and a brief account of the  
Authors Life, by Doctor Fuller.

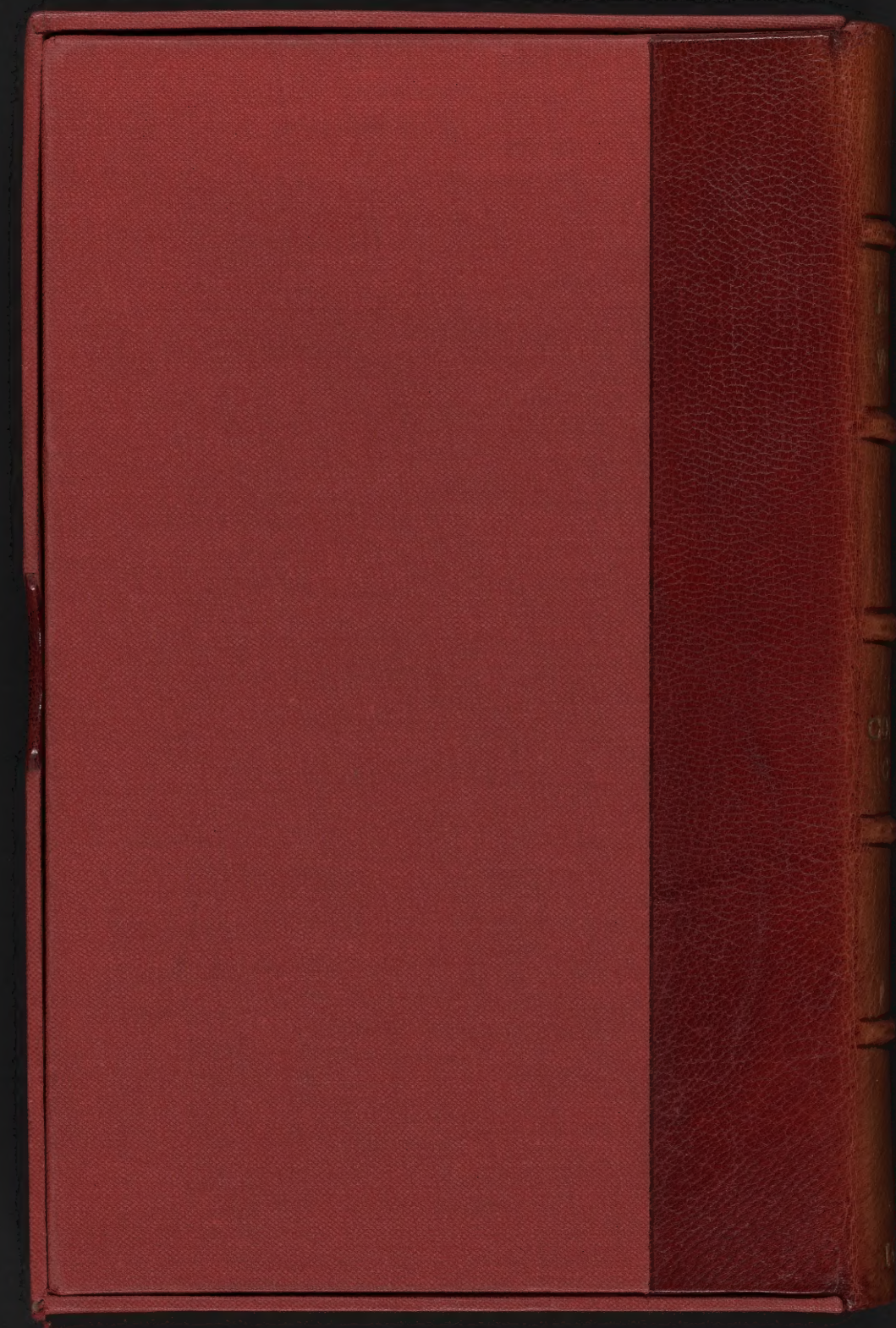
Those Famous Lozenges for the Cure of  
Consumptions, Coughs new and old, and  
all other Diseases incident to the Lungs  
are made by Edmund Buckworth, Physitian  
to the Queens most Excellent Majesty  
and are Sold at the Green Dragon in St  
Pauls Church Yard, where you may also  
have his Famous Homogenial Pill.













JOSSELYN  
VOYAGES

PETER  
COLLINSON'S  
COPIES

1672-74



ROSSELYN'S

VOYAGE

LONDON

1674

